

# Cornell University Library

BOUGHT WITH THE INCOME  
FROM THE

SAGE ENDOWMENT FUND

THE GIFT OF

Henry W. Sage

1891

A. 90988

3/4/96



PR

2721

G87

V.3



*THE HUTH LIBRARY.*

---

THE  
COMPLETE WORKS  
OF  
THOMAS NASHE.

*VOL. III.*

HAUE WITH YOU TO SAFFRON-WALDEN.  
TERRORS OF THE NIGHT.

1594—1596.



Free vent of words.

*Venus and Adonis*, l. 334.

Bitter words to ban.

*Rape of Lucrece*, l. 1460.



Cornell University  
Library

The original of this book is in  
the Cornell University Library.

There are no known copyright restrictions in  
the United States on the use of the text.





# The Smith Library

OR

ELIZABETHAN-JACOBÆAN

*Unique or Very Rare*

BOOKS

IN

VERSE AND PROSE

LARGELY

*From the Library of*



Henry Hoth Esq<sup>r</sup>

(Engraving copied from a contemporary sketch.)

*Edited with Introductions, Notes and Illustrations, &c.*

BY THE

*Rev. Alexander B. G. M. D. D. F. F. H.*

FOR PRIVATE CIRCULATION ONLY



The Duth Library.

---

THE  
COMPLETE WORKS  
OF  
THOMAS NASHE.

IN FOUR VOLUMES.

FOR THE FIRST TIME COLLECTED AND EDITED  
WITH MEMORIAL-INTRODUCTION, NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS, ETC.

BY THE REV.

ALEXANDER B. GROSART, LL.D. (EDIN.), F.S.A. (SCOT.),  
*St. George's, Blackburn, Lancashire.*

VOL. III.

HAUE WITH YOU TO SAFFRON-WALDEN.

TERRORS OF THE NIGHT.

1594—96.

PRINTED FOR PRIVATE CIRCULATION ONLY.

1883—84.

50 Copies.]



A. 90988

## CONTENTS.

---

	PAGE	
HAUE WITH YOU TO SAFFRON-WALDEN . . .	I	✓
TERRORS OF THE NIGHT . . . . .	209	✓

OH, who that sees this murky way would think  
That even here are issues of the light?  
Eschewing which so many spirits sink,  
Embracing as their bride the vacant night;  
Yet still it winds round true Elysian bowers,  
Ne'er closed to man while last his mortal hours.

No gate of burning adamant is there  
Against us barr'd, prohibiting ingress.  
Short is the way, and soft as summer's air,  
That upward leads to joy no tongues express,  
To those smooth confines where the eye can trace  
The gates of light, and Heaven's own glorious face.

*Ouranogaia*, vol. i., c. xii., p. 262 (1872).

Night's 'scapes doth open lay.

*Rape of Lucrece*, l. 747.



IX.

# HARVEY-GREENE TRACTATES.

III. HAVE WITH YOU TO SAFFRON-WALDEN.

1596.



#### NOTE.

For 'Haue with you to Saffron-Walden' I am indebted to the Huth Library. See 'Memorial-Introduction—Critical' in closing volume on it. It is a small 4to of 83 unpagged leaves—title-page and A 2—X 3.—G.





Haue vvith you to Saf-  
fron-vvalden.

OR,

Gabriell Harueys Hunt is vp.

*Containing a full Answere to the eldest sonne  
of the Halter-maker.*

OR,

Nashe his Confutation of the sinfull  
Doctor.

The Mott or Posie, instead of *Omne tulit punctum :*  
*Pacis fiducia nunquam.*

*As much to say, as I sayd I would speake with  
him.*



Printed at London by *Iohn Danter.*  
1596.





To the most Orthodoxall and reuerent Cor-  
 rector of staring haire, the sincere &  
*finigraphicall rarifier of prolixious rough*  
*barbarisme, the thrice egregious and cen-*  
*soriall animaduertiser of vagrant moustachios,*  
*chiefe scauinger of chins, and principall \**  
*Head-man of the parish wherein* <sup>\* quasi conuer-</sup>  
*he dwells, speciall superuifor of all* <sup>sant about</sup>  
*excrementall superfluities for Trinitie Col-*  
*ledge in Cambridge, and (to conclude) a not*  
*able and singular benefactor to all beards*  
*in generall, Don Richardo Barbarossa de*  
*Cæsario, Tho: Nashe wisheth the highest*  
*Toppe of his contentment and felicitie, and*  
*the Shortning of all his enemies.*



CUTE & amiable Dick, not *Dic mihi*  
*Musa virum*, Musing Dick, that studied  
 a whole yeare to know which was the  
 male and female of red herrings : nor *Dic obsecro*,

Dick of all Dicks, that, in a Church where the Organs were defac'd, came and offred himselfe with his pipe and taber : nor old Dick of the Castle, that vpon the newes of / the losse of *Calis*, went and put a whole bird-spit in the pike of his buckler : nor Dick Swash, or desperate Dick, that's such a terrible Cutter at a chyne of beefe, and deuoures more meate at Ordinaries, in discourfing of his fraies and deep acting of his flashing and hewing, than would serue halfe a dozen Brewers Dray-men : nor *Dick of the Cow*, that mad Demilance Northren Borderer, who plaied his prizes with the lord *Jockey* so brauely : but paraphrastically gallant Patron Dick, as good a fellow as euer was Heigh fill the pot hostesse : curteous Dicke, comical Dicke, liuely Dicke, louely Dicke, learned Dicke, olde *Dicke of Lichfield*, *Iubeo te plurimum saluere*, which is, by interpretation, I ioy to heare thou hast so profited in gibridge.

I am sure thou wondrest not a little, what I meane to come vppon thee so straungely with such a huge dicker of Dicks in a heape altogether : but that's but to shew the redundance of thy honorable Familie, and how affluent and copious thy name is in all places, though *Erasmus*, in his *Copia Verborum*, neuer mentions it.

Without further circumstance, to make *short*, (which, to speake troth, is onely proper to thy

Trade,) / the fhort and long of it is this, There is a certaine kinde of Doctor of late very pittifully growen bald, and thereupon is to be fhauen immediately, to trie if that will help him: now I know no fuch nimble fellow at his weapon in all *England* as thy felfe, who (as I heare) ftandft in election at this infant to bee chiefe *Crowner* or clipper of crownes in *Cambridge*, and yet no defacer of the *Queenes* coyne neither: and it is pittie but thou fhouldft haue it, for thou haft long feru'd as a *Clarke* in the *crowne* office, and concluded fyllogifmes in *Barbara* anie time this fixteene yeare, and yet neuer metft with anie requittall, except it were fome few *french crownes*, pild *Friers* crownes, drye fhauen, not fo much worth as one of thefe *Scottifh* horne crownes: which (thy verie enemies muft needes confefse) were but *bare* wages, (yea, as bare as my nayle, I faith,) for thy braue defert and dexteritie: & fome fuch *Thinne* gratuitie or *Haire-loome* it may be the Doctor may present thee with, but how euer it *falls*, hath his head or his hayre the falling fickneffe neuer fo, without anie more delay, *Of or on*, trimm'd hee muft bee with a trice, and there is no remedie, but thou muft needes come and ioyne with me to giue him the terrible cut.

Where / fore (good *Dick*) on with thy apron, & arme thy felfe to *fet him downe* at the firft word:

Stand to him, I say, and take him a button lower :

\* Barbers feare not to shew him a \* knacke of thy  
knacking their occupation, and once in thy life let it be  
fingers.

† Theyr lousy laid, that a Doctor weares thy † cloth,  
naprie they or. that thou hast cauld him to doo  
put about pennance, and weare *Haire-cloth* for his  
més neckes, finnes. Were he as he hath been (I can  
are trimming.

affure thee) he would clothe and adorne thee with manie gracious gallant complements, and not a rotten tooth that hangs out at thy shop window, but should cost him an indefinite Turkish armie of English *Hexameters*. O, he hath been olde dogge at that drunken, staggering kinde of verse, which is all vp hill and downe hill, like the way betwixt *Stamford* and *Beechfeeld*, and goes like a horse plunging through the myre in the deep of winter, now soust vp to the saddle, and straight aloft on his tiptoes. Indeed, in old King Harrie sinceritie, a kinde of verse it is, hee hath been enfeoft in from his minoritie, for as I haue bin faithfully informed, hee first cryde in that verse in the verie moment of his birth, and when he was but yet a

† Siquis, a bill fresh-man in *Cambridge*, he set vp † Si-  
for anything quiffes, & sent his accounts to his father  
lost.

in those iouling Heroicks. Come, come, account  
§ For diuision of him as you list, by *Poll* and *Aedipoll* I  
& contrac- proteft, your noble / Science of § decision  
tion. and contraction is immortally beholding to him,

for twice double his Patrimonie hath he spent in carefull cherishing & preferuing his picker-deuant: and besides, a deuine vicarly brother of his, called *Astrologicall Richard*, some few yeares since (for the benefit of his countrey) most studiously compyled a *profound Abridgement upon beards*, & therein copiously dilated of the true discipline of peakes, & no lesse fruitlessly determined betwixt the Swallowes taile cut, & the round beard like a rubbing brush. It was my chaunce (O thrice blessed chaunce) to the great comfort of my Muse to peruse it, although it came but priuately in Print: and for a more ratefied passport (in thy opinion) that I haue read it and digested it, this title it beareth, a \* *Defence of* \* *Therefore be-*  
*short haire against Synesius and Pierius:* *like hee gaue*  
or rather, in more familiar English to *it that title,*  
expresse it, a Dash ouer the head against *because it was*  
baldnes, verie necessary to be obserued *most of it*  
of al the *looser* sort, or *loose* haird sort, of yong *short haire his*  
Gentlemen & Courtiers, and no lesse pleasant and *father made*  
profitable to be remembred of the whole Com- *ropes of.*  
monwealth of the Barbars. The Posie theretoo annexed, *Prolixior est breuitate sua*, as much to say, as Burne Bees, and haue bees, &. hair the more it is cut the more it comes: lately deuised and set forth by *Richard Haruey* the /vnluckie Prophet of prodigies. If this may not settle thy beleefe, but

yet thou requirest a further token to make vp euen money, in the Epistle Dedicatorie thereof to a great Man of this Land, whom he calls *his verie right honourable good Lord*, he recounteth his large bounties bestowed vpon him, and talkes of the secret fauours which hee did him in his Studie or Clofet at Court.

Heare you Dick, marke you here what a iewell this learning is: how long will it be, ere thou studie thy felfe to the like preferment? No reason I see, why thou being a Barber, shouldst not bee as *hair-braind* as he. Onely for writing a booke of beards, in which he had no further experience, but by looking on his father when he made hairs, hair lines I meane, and yet not such *lines* of life as a hangman hath in his hand, but haire lines to hang linnen on: for that smal demerit (I say) is he thus aduanced and courted, & from Astrologicall Dick raised to bee fauorite Dick. And verie meete it is he should be so fauored and raised by high Personages, for before he was as low a Parson or Vicar as a man could lightly set ey on.

With teares be it spoken, too few such lowly Parsons & Preachers we haue, who, laying aside all worldly encumbrances, & plesant cōuerfing with Saint / *Austen*, *Ierome*, *Chriſtoſtome*, wilbe content to read a Lecture, as he hath done, *de lana caprina*, (almost as slender a cast subiect as a Catts



smelling haire,) or trauerse the subtile distinctions twixt *short cut and long taile*.

Fie, this is not the fortieth dandiprat part of the affectionate *Items*, hee hath bequeathed on your mysterie : with fūe thousand other doctrinal deuotions, hath he adopted himselfe more than a by founder of your trade, conioyning with his afore-said Doctor Brother in eightie eight browne Bakers dozen of Almanackes.

In euerie of which famous Annals of the foure windes, vnfallible rules are prescribed for men to obserue the best time to breed loue-lockes in, and so to \*ringle a thorough hayre for \* Some holde that any place of a mans chin, being rubb with a gold rig beeing heated, will so harden the skin, that there shall neuer anie haire grow there more. rooting, that it shall neuer put foorth his snayles hornes againe : as also vnder what Planet a man maye with least danger picke his teeth, and how to catch the Sun in such a phisicall Signe, that one may fweare and be not a haire the worfe.

But these amplifications adiourned to another Returne, all the deuoyre, Diamond Dick, which I am in this Epistle of thy daintie composition to expostulate, is no more but † Bestellein, the royallest Passe in Germanie that may bee, onely for Dukes & great princes. this, that since vnder thy redoubted patronage and protection my workes are to haue their royal † *Bestellein*, and more than common safe-conduct into the world, and

that for the Meridian of thy honour and magnificence they are chiefly eleuated & erected, thou wouldst brauely mount thee on thy barbed steed, *alias* thy triumphant barbers Chaire, and girding thy keene *Palermo* rasour to thy side, in stead of a trenchant Turkish femitorie, and setting thy sharpe pointed \* launce in his rest, be with them at a haire's bredth that backbite and detract me.

\* *A lace, an  
instrumēt to  
let blood  
with.*

Phlebothomize them, sting them, tutch them Dick, tutch them, play the valiant man at *Armes*, and let them blood and spare not; the Lawe allowes thee to doe it, it will beare no action: and thou, beeing a Barber Surgeon, art priuilegd to dresse flesh in Lent, or anie thing.

Admit this be not sufficient to coole the heat of their courage, ferch them in another vaine, by discharging thy pocket dags against them, and let them smart for it to the prooffe.

Steele thy painted May-pole, or more properly to tearme it, thy redoubted rigorous horsmans staffe (which at thy dore as a manifest *signe* thou hangst forth of thy martiall prowesse and hardiment) on their insolent creasts, that maligne and despise me, and forbear not to bring forth all thy brasse / peeces against them. It is well known thou hast been a Commaunder and a Souldier euer since *Tilbury Campe*, and earlie and late *walkt the*

*round*, and dealt verie *short* and *round* with all those that come vnder thy fingers: strugled through the *foamie* deepe, and skirmisht on the *downes*: wherefore, if thou tak'st them not downe foundlie, with a hey downe and a derry, and doost not shuffle and cut with them lustilie, *actum est de pudicitia*, I aske of God thou maist light vpon none but bald-pates till thou diest. But I trow thou wilt carry a better pate with thee, and not suffer any of these indigent old fashiond iudgements to carry it away: whose wits were right stuffe when those loue-letters in rime were in request, & whose capacities neuer mended their pace, since *Pace*, the Duke of *Norfolkes* foole died. As for the decaied Proctor of *Saffron-walden* himself, if he wander within the precincts of thy indignation, I make no question but of thy owne accord, without any motion of mine, thou wilt be as ready as any *catchpoule*, out of all *scotch* & *notch*, to torment him, & deal as *snip snap* snappishly with him, as euer he was delt withall since he first dated letters from his gallerie in *Trinitie Hall*; not suffering a lowse that belongs to him to passe thy hands without a *powling* penny: and yet as / I shrewdly preface, thou shalt not finde many powling pence about him neither, except he rob *Peter* to pay *Powle*, empouerish his spiritual Vicar brother to helpe to pay for his powling, and he, alas,

(dolefull foure nobles Curate, nothing so good as the Confessour of Tyburne, or Superintendent of *Pancredge*,) hath nittifide himselfe with a dish, *rotundè profundè*, any time this fourteene yeare, to faue charges of sheep-shearing: &, not to make of a thing more than it is, hath scarce so much Ecclesiasticall liuing in all, as will serue to buy him cruell strings to his bookes, and haire buttons.

Wherefore I passe not if in tender charitie and commiseration of his estate, I adde ten pound & a purse to his wages and stipend, canuaze him and his Angell brother *Gabriell* in ten sheetes of paper, and so leaue them to goe hang themselues; or outright to hang, draw, and quarter them al vnder one, I care not if I make it eighteen: on that condition, in their last wil & testament they bequeath me eightene wise words in the way of answere betwixt them.

I dare giue my word for them, they will neuer doe it, no, not although it were inioynd to them in stead of their neckverse: their whole stock of wit, when it was at the best, beeing but ten English / Hexameters and a *Lenuoy*: wherefore generous Dick, (without hum drum be it spoken) I vtterly despaire of them, or not so much despaire of them, as count them a paire of poore ideots, being not only but also two brothers, two block-heads, two blunderkins, hauing their braines stuf

with nought but balder-dash, but that they are the verie botts & the glanders to the gentle Readers, the dead Palfie and Apoplexie of the Presse, the *Sarpego* and the *Sciatica* of the 7. Liberall Sciences, the surfetting vomit of Ladie Vanitie, the sworne bards to one anothers vain-glorie: &, to conclude, the most contemptible *Mounfier Aiaxes* of excrementall conceipts, and stinking kennel-rakt vp inuention, that this or anie Age euer afforded.

I pry thee, surmounting *Donzel Dick*, whiles I am in this heate of Inuectiue, let me remember thee to do this one kindnes more for me, *videlicet*, when thou hast frizled and scrubd and tickled the haire sweetly, and that thou hast filcht thy selfe into an excellent honourable assemblie of sharpe iudiciall fierie wits and fine spirits, bee it this winter at an Euening tearme, or where-euer, with all the thundering grace and magnanimous eloquence that thou hast, put vp this heroycall Grace in their behalfe, if thou bee not past grace.

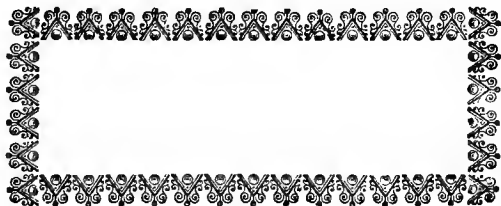
*A / Grace put vp in behalfe of the Harueys.*

Supplicat reuerentiis vestris, per Apostrophem, &c.

In English thus:

*Most humblie sueth to your Reuerences, the reprobate brace of Brothers of the Harueys: to wit, witlesse Gabriell and ruffling Richard; That whereas for*

anie time this foure and twentie yeare they haue plaid the fantastickall gub-shites and goose-giblets in Print, and kept a hatefull scribbling and a pamphletting about earth-quakes, coniunctions, inundations, the fearfull blazing starre, and the forsworne Flaxe-wife: and tooke vpon them to be false Prophets, Weather-wizards, Fortune-tellers, Poets, Philosophers, Orators, Historiographers, Mounte-bankes, Ballet-makers, and left no Arte vndefamed with their filthie dull-headed practise: it may please your Worships and Masterships, these insidell premisses considered, & that they haue so fully performed all their aets in absurditie, impudence, & foolerie, to grant them their absolute graces, to commence at Dawes crosse, and with your general subscriptions confirm them for the profoundest Arcandums, Acarnanians, and Dizards, that haue been discovered since the Deluge: & so let them passe throughout the Queenes Dominions.



Purposely that space I left, that as manie as I shall perfwade they are *Pachecoës*, *Poldaviffes*, and *Dringles*, may fet their hands to their definitiue sentence, and with the Clearke helpe to crye *Amen* to their eternall vnhandfomming.

Plie them, plie them vnceffantly, *unico Dick*, euen as a Water-man plies for his Fares, and insinuate and goe about the bush with them, like as thou art wont to insinuate and go about the grizlie bushie beard of some sauage Saracen Butcher, and neuer furcease flaunting and firking it in fustian, till vnder the Vniuersities vnited hand & seale they bee enacted as *Obfolæte* a case of Cockescombes, as euer he was in *Trinitie Colledge*, that would not carrie his Tutors bow into the field, because it would not edifie: or his fellow *qui quæ codshead*, that in the Latine Tragedie of *K. Richard*, cride, *Ad vrbs, ad vrbs, ad vrbs*, when his whole Part was no more, but *Vrbs, vrbs, ad arma, ad arma*.

Shall I make a motion which I would not haue thee thinke I induce to flatter thee neyther, thou being not in my walke, whereby I might come to wash my handes with thee a mornings, or get a sprinkling or a brushing for a brybe: wilt thou commence and make no / more ado, since thou hast almost as much learning and farre more wit, than the two Brothers, or eyther of those profound *qui mihi Discipulaffes* aboue mentioned?

Now verely (I perswade mee) if thou wouldst attempt it, not all the *Gabriels* betwixt this and *Godmanchester*, put together, wold make a more perpolite cathedral Doctōr than thy selfe: for all language at thy fingers ende thou hast as perfect as *Spruce*, and nere a *Dicke Haruey*, or cathedral Doctōr of them all, can read a more smooth fuccinct *Lipsian* Lecture of short haire, than thou ouer thy Barbars Chaire, if thou bee so disposed, nor stand and encounter all commers so constantly.

Dick, I exhort thee as a brother, be not a horse to forget thy own worth : thou art in place where thou maist promote thy selfe, do not close-prison and eclipse thy vertues in the narrow glasse lantorne of thy Barbers shop, but reflect them vp and downe the Realme : like to those prospectiue glasses which expresse not the similitudes they receiue neere hand, but cast them in the ayre afarre off, where they are more clerely represented.

Commence, commence, I admonish thee, thy merits are ripe for it, & there haue been Doctōrs of thy Facultie, as Doctōr *Dodipowle* for example:/ and here in *London*, yet extant *viva voce* to testifie, *Doctōr Nott* and *Doctōr Powle*, none of which in *notting* and *powling* go beyond thee. To vtter vnto thee my fancie as touching those Neoterick tongues thou professest, in whose pronounciation old



*Tooly* and thou varie as much, as *Stephen Gardineer*, and Sir *Iohn Cheeke* about the pronounciation of the Greeke tongue: loe, for a testifying incouragement how much I wish thy encrease in those languages, I haue here tooke the paines to nit and louze ouer the Doctours Booke, and though manie cholericke Cookes about *London* in a mad rage haue dismembred it, and thrust it piping hot into the ouen vnder the bottomes of dowsets, and impioussly prickt the torne sheetes of it, for basting paper, on the outsidcs of Geese and roasting Beefe, to keepe them from burning; yet haue I naturally cherisht it and hugd it in my bosome, euen as a Carrier of *Bosomes Inne* dooth a Cheese vnder his arme, and the purest *Parmasen* magget Phrases therein, cull'd and pickt out to present thee with.

Read and peruse them ouer, as diligently as thou wouldst doo a charme against the tooth-ache: for this I can gospelly auouch, no sleight paynes hath the Doctour tooke in collecting them, / consulting a whole quarter of a yeare with *Textors* Epithites (which he borrowd of a frend of mine in Poules Churchyard) only to pounse them out more poetically.

Be not self-wild, but insist in my precepts, and I will tutour thee so Pythagoreantly how to husband them in alcompanies, that euen *Willington*\* himselfe,

\* In old MS. 'Williamson.'—G.

thy fellow Barbar in *Cambridge*, (who hath long borne the bell for finicall defcating on the *Crates*) fhallbe conftained to worfhip and offer to thee.

Abruptly to breake into the bowels of this *Index* of bald inkhornifme, what faift thou for all thou *A rag borrowd from his owne dunghil.* art reputed fuch an *ænigmaticall linguift* (vnder the doctors *terme probatorie* licenfe bee it fpoken, being a terme with him as frequent as ftanding vpon termes among lawiers), canft thou enter into the true nature of *villanie by conniuece*? I hold a groate thou canft not confter it. A word it is, that the Doctor lay a whole weeke and a day & a night, entranced on his bed, to bring forth, and on the Munday euening late, caufd all the bels, in the Parifh where he then fojournd, to be rong forth, for ioy that he was deliuerd of it.

Repent, and be afhamed of thy rudeneffe: O thou that haft made fo manie men winke whyles thou caft fuds in their eyes, and yet knoweft not what / *Conniuece* meanes. Plodding and dunftically like a clowne of *Cherry-hinton*, bafely thou befeecheft them to winke, whiles thou mak'ft a Tennis-court of their faces, by brick-walling thy clay-balls croffe vp and downe their cheekes: whereas if thou wert right orthographizd in the Doctors elocution, thou wouldft fay in ftcad of,

I pray Sir winke, I must wash you, Sir, by your fauour I must require your *commiue*ce.

Againe, it is thy custome, being sent for to some tall old finckanter, or stigmaticall bearded Master of Arte, that hath been chin-bound euer since *Charles* the ninths massacre in *France*, to rush in bluntly with thy washing bowle and thy nurse-cloutes vnder thy cloake, and after a few scraping ceremonies, to aske if his Worship bee at leasure to be recreated.

*A malo in peius*, that is the meanest salutation that ere I heard : vtterly thou bewrayest thy *non-proficencie* in the Doctors Paracelsian rope-retorique. What a pestilence, a yong braine, and so poore and penurious in *Conges*? Rayse thy conceipt on the trees, or rather than faile, new corke it at the heeles, before it should thus walke bare-foote vp and downe the streetes.

Hence take thy Harueticall *exordium*, if thou wouldst haue thy conceit the worlds fauourite at first / dash, *Omniscious and omnisufficient Master Doctor*, (for so hee calls *Cornelius Agrippa*) *will it please you to bee cosmologizd and smirkt?*

Suppose a Bishop come to the Vniuersitie, as the Bishop of *Lincolne* somtimes to visit *Kings Colledge*, and the Bishop of *Ely Saint Iohns*, (whiles there was euer a bishop there,) a playne bishop (like *Martin*) at euerie word thou wilt terme him,

whereas if thou wert but one hower entred commons in *Haruey de Oratore, A great Pontife or Demy-god in omnisufficiencie* thou wouldst enstall him.

But to appose thee more dallyingly and familiarly. It is giuen out amongst Schollers, that thou hast a passing singular good wit : now to trie whither thou hast so or no, let me heare what change of phrasēs thou hast to describe a good wit in, or how, in Pedagogue *Tragotanto* Doctors english, thou canst flourish vpon it.

I feele thy pulses beat slowly alreadie, although thou beest fortie mile off from mee, and this impotent answere (with much adoo) droppes from thee, euen as sweate from a leane man that drinks sacke ; namely, that thou thinkest there cannot much extraordinarie descant be made of it, except it be to say, such a one hath an admirable capacitie, an incomparable quick inuention, and a surmounting rich spirit aboue all men. Hah ha, a destitute poore fellow art thou, and hast mist mee nine score : goe, goe, get thee a caudle and keepe thy selfe warme in thy bed, for, out of question, thy spirit is in a consumption.

A rich spirit quoth a ? nay then a spirit in the way of honestie too : loe this it is, to be read in nothing but in *Barnabe Riches* workes. Spend but a quarter so much time in mumping vpon

*Gabrielisme*, and Ile be bound, bodie and goods, thou wilt not anie longer sneakingly come forth with a rich spirit and an admirable capacitie, but *an enthusiasticall spirit & a nimble entelechy*. In the courſe of my Booke a whole catalogue thou ſhalt finde of all theſe *Guiny* phraſes, to which, in zealous care of thy reformation, I referre thee.

*Dii boni, boni, quid porto?* What a large Diocēſſe of epiſtling haue I here progreſt through? The Summons to a generall Councell, with all the reaſons moouing thereunto, or *Tindalls* Prologue before the New Teſtament, are but ſhort Graces before meate, in compariſon of this my immoderate Dedication. But the beſt is, if it be too long, thou haſt a combe and a paire of ſciſſers to curtall it; or, if thou liſt not ſtand ſo long about it, with a *Trinitie Colledge* rubber thou maiſt epitomize it extempore.

Mar / rie if thou long to heare the reaſon why I haue ſo ſtretcht it on the tenter-hooke, forſooth it is a garment for the woodcocke *Gabriel Haruey*, and fooles, ye know, alwaies for the moſt part (eſpeciallie if they bee naturall fooles) are ſuted in long coates; wherevpon I ſet vp my reſt to ſhape his garments of the ſame ſize, that I might be ſure to fit on his ſkirts.

Dick, no more at this time, but *Nos-da diu cata-why*, and all the recompence I can make thee for

being, like a Chancery Declaration, so tiring troublesome vnto thee, is this, if thou wilt haue the Doctour for an Anatomie, thou shalt; doo but speake the word, and I am the man will deliuer him to thee to be scocht and carbonadoed: but in anie case speake quickly, for heere he lies at the last gaspe of surrendering all his credit and reputation.

*Thy Friend Tho. Nashe,  
if thou bee'st foe, Dick, to  
all the generation of  
the Harueys.*





To all Christian Readers, to whom these  
Presents shall come.

*WELL said, my Maisters, I perceyue there cannot  
a new Booke come forth but you will haue  
a fling at it. Say, what are you reading? Nashe  
against Haruey. Fo, thats a stale ieast, hee hath  
been this two or three yeare about it. O good  
brother Timothie, rule your reason, the Miller  
gryndes more mens corne than one: and those that  
resolutely goe through with anie quarrell, must set  
all their worldly busines at a stay, before they draw  
it to the poynt. I will not gainsay but I haue  
cherisht a purpose of persecuting this Liff-lander  
Bogarian so long time as ye speak of, and that like  
the long snouted Beast (whose backe is Castle prooffe)  
carrying her yong in her wombe three yere ere she  
be deliuered, I haue been big with childe of a common  
place of reuenge, euer since the hanging of Lopus:  
but to say I plodded vpon it continually, and vsed  
in all this space nothing but gall to make inke with,  
is a lye befitting a base swabberly lowsie sailer, who  
hauing been neuer but a month at sea in his life,*

*and duckt at the maine yards arme twice or thrice for pilferie, when hee comes home / sweares hee hath been seuteene yeares in the Turkes gallies.*

Patientia vestra, there is not one pint of wine, more than the iust Bill of costs and charges in setting forth, to be got by anie of these bitter-sauced Inuectiues. Some foolish praise perhaps we may meete with, such as is afforded to ordinarie Iesters that make sport: but otherwise we are like those fugitiue priests in Spaine and Portugall, whom the Pope (verie liberally) prefers to Irish Bishoprickes, but allowes them not a pennie of anie liuing to maintaine them with, saue onely certaine Friers to beg for them.

High titles (as they of Bishops and Prelates) so of Poets and Writers, we haue in the world, when in stead of their begging Friers, the fire of our wit is left, as our onely last refuge to warme vs.

Haruey and I (a couple of beggers) take vpon vs to bandie factions, and contend like the Vrfini and Coloni in Roome: or as the Turkes and Persians about Mahomet and Mortus Alli, which should bee the greatest: and (with the Indians) head our inuentions arrowes with Vipers teeth, and steep them in the bloud of Adders and Serpents, and spend as much time in arguing pro & contra, as a man might haue found out the quadrature of the Circle in: when all the controuersie is no more but this,



*he began with mee, and cannot tell how to make an end; and I would faine end or rid my hands of him, if he had not first begun.*

*I protest I doo not write against him because I hate him, but that I would confirme and plainly shew, to a number of weake beleeuers in my sufficiencie, that I am able to answere him: and his frends, and not his enemies let him thanke for this heauie load of disgrace I lay vpon him, since theyr extreame disabling of mee in this kinde, & vrging what a triumph he had ouer me, hath made me to ransacke my standish more than I would.*

*This I will boldly say, looke how long it is since he writ against me, so long haue I giuen him a lease of his life, & he hath onely held it by my mercie.*

*His Booke, or Magna Charta, which against M. Lilly & me he addrest, I hauing kept idle by me, in a by settle out of sight amongst old shooes and bootes almost this two yere, and in meere pitie of him would neuer looke vpon it but in some calme pleasing humor, for feare least in my melancholy too cruelly I should haue martyrd him.*

*And yet, though vengeance comes not Zephiris & hirundine prima, in the first springing prime of his schisme and heresie, let him not looke for one of Frier Tecelius Pardons, he that (as Sleidane reports) first stird vp Luther, pronouncing from the Pope free salarie indulgence to anie man, though*

*he had deflowred the Virgine Mary, and absolution as well for sinnes past as sinnes to come: for I meane to come vpon him with a tempest of thunder and lightning, worse than the stormes in the West Indies cald the Furicanoes, and compleate arme more words for his confusion, than Wezell in Germanie is able to arme men, that hath absolute furniture for three hundred thousand at all times.*

*Gentlemen, what think ye of this sober mortified stile? I dare say a number of ye haue drawn it to a verdit alredie: and as an Elephants forelegs are longer than his hinder, so you imagine my former confutation wilbe better than my latter. Nay, then, Aesopum non attriuitis, you are as ignorant in the true mouings of my Muse as the Astronomers are in the true mouings of Mars, which to this day they could neuer attaine too. For how euer, in the first setting foorth, I martch faire and softly, like a man that rides vpon his owne horse, and like the Caspian sea seeme neither to ebbe nor flow, but keep a smooth plain forme in my eloquence, as one of the Lacedemonian Ephori, or Baldwin in his morrall sentences (which now are all snatcht vp for painters posies): yet you shall see me, in two or three leaues hence, crie Heigh for our towne greene, and powre hot boyling inke on this contemptible Heggledpegs barrain scalp, as men condemned for stealing by Richard de corde Lions law, had hot boyling pitch powrd on their*

*heads, and feathers strewd vppon, that wheresoever they came, they might be knowne.*

*I know I am too long in preparing an entrance into my Text, fed tandem denique to the matter and the purpose.*

*The method I meane to vse, in persecuting this Peter Maluenda and Sinibaldo Crasko, is no more but this.*

*Memorandum, I frame my whole Booke in the nature of a Dialogue, much like Bullen and his Doct̃or Tocrub, whereof the Interlocuters are these :*

*Inprimis, Senior Importunio, the Opponent.*

*The second, Grand Confiliadore, chiefe Censor or Moderator.*

*The third, Domino Bentiuole, one that stands, as it were, at the line in a Tennis-court, and takes euerie ball at the volly.*

*The fourth, Don Carneades de booneCompagniola, who like a busie Countrey Iustice sits on the Bench, and preacheth to theeues out of their own confessions : or rather, like a Quartermaster or Treasurer of Bride-well, whose office | is to giue so many strokes with the hammer, as the publican vnchast offender is to haue stripes, and by the same Tuballs musique to warne the blue-coate Corrector when he should patience and surcease : so continually, when by Senior Importuno the Doct̃or is brought to the Crosse, Don Carneades sets downe what proportion of iustice is to*

*be executed vpon him, and, when his backe hath bled sufficient, giues a signall of retrayt.*

*Neither would I haue you imagine that all these personages are fained, like Americke Vesputius, & the rest of the Antwerpe Speakers in Sir Thomas Moores Vtopia : for, as true as Bankes his Horse knowes a Spaniard from an Englishman, or there went vp one and twentie Maides to the top of Boston Steeple, and there came but one downe againe, so true it is that there are men which haue dealt with me in the same humour that heere I shaddow. In some nooke or blind angle of the Black-Friers you may suppose (if you will) this honest conference to bee held, after the same manner that one of these Italionate conferences about a Duell is wont solemnly to be handled, which is, when a man, being specially toucht in reputation, or challenged to the field vpon equal tearmes, calls all his frends together, and askes them their aduice how he should carrie selfe in the action.*

*Him that I tearme Senior Importunio is a Gentleman of good qualitie, to whom I rest manie waies beholding, and one (as the Philosophers say of winde that it is nothing but aire vehemently moou'd) so hath he neuer ceast, with all the vehemence of winde or breath that he hath, to incite and mooue me to win my spurres in this iourney.*

*Vnder Grand Consiliadore, I allude to a graue reuerend Gimnosophist (Amicorum amicissimus, of all*

*my Friends the most zealous) that as Aesculapius built an Oracle of the sunne at Athens, so is his Chamber an Oracle or Conuocation Chappell of sound counsaile, for all the better sort of the sonnes of vnderstanding about London, and (as it were) an vsuall market of good fellowship and conference.*

*Hee also (as well as Senior Importuno) hath dealt with me very importunately, to employ all my Forces in this Expedition, and as Hippocrates preferued the Citie of Coos from a great plague or mortalitie (generally disperfed throughout Greece) by perswading them to kindle fires in publique places, whereby the aire might be purified: so hath hee (in most feruent deuotion to my well dooing) vncessantly perswaded me to preferue my credit from iadish dying of the scratches, by powerfull through enkindling this Pinego Rimos euerlasting fire of damnation.*

*For Domino Bentiuole and Don Carneades de bonne compagniola, they be men that haue as full shares in my loue and affection as the former.*

*The antecedent of the two, besides true resolution and valure (wherewith he hath ennobled his name extraordinarie) and a ripe pleasant wit in conuersing, hath in him a perfect vchangeable true habit of honestie, imitating the Arte of Musique, which the Professours thereof affirme to be infinite and without end.*

*And for the subsequent or hindermost of the paire,*

*who likewise is none of the vnworthiest retainers to Madame Bellona, hee is another Florentine Poggius for mirthfull sportiue conceit & quick inuention, ignem faciens ex lapide nigro, (which Munster in his Cosmography alledgeth / for the greatest wonder of England) that is, wresting delight out of aniething. And this ouer and aboue I will giue in euidence for his praise, that though all the ancient Records and Prefidents of ingenuous Apothegs and Emblemes were burnt, (as Polidore Virgill in King Harry the eights time burnt all the ancient Records of the true beginning of this our Ile, after hee had finished his Chronicle) yet out of his affluent capacitie they were to be renewed and reedified farre better.*

*These four with myselfe, whom I personate as the Respondent in the last place, shall (according as God wil giue them grace) clap up a Colloquium amongst them, and so schoole my gentle Comrade, or neighbour, Quiquiffe in some few short principles of my learning and industrie, that (I doubt not) by that time they haue concluded and dispatcht, with him, my Gorboduck Huddleduddle will gladly (on his knees) resigne to mee his Doctourship; and as Antisthenes could not beate Diogenes away from him, but he would needes be his scholler whether he would or no: so shall I haue him haunt me vp and downe to be my prentise to learne to endite, and doo what I can, I shall not be shut of him.*

*This is once, I both can and wilbe shut presently of this tedious Chapter of contents, least, whereas I prepared it as an antipast to whet your stomacks, it cleane take away your stomackes, and you surfet of it before meate come: wherefore, onely giuing you this one caueat to obserue in reading my Booke, which Aristotle prescribes to them that read Histories, namely, that they bee not nimis credulos aut incredulos, too rash or too slow of beleefe, and earnestly commending me to Qui cytharum neruis, & neruis temperat arcum, the melodious God of Gam vt / are, that is life and sinnewes in euerie thing; as also to Ioues ancient trustie Roger, frisking come aloft sprightly Mercury, that hath wings for his moustachies, wings for his ey-browes, wings growing out of his chinne like a thorough haire, wings at his armes, like a fooles coate with foure elbowes, wings for his riding bases, wings at his heeles in stead of spurres, and is true Prince of Wingan-decoy in euerie thing, and desiring him to inspire my pen with some of his nimblest Pomados and Sommersets, & be still close at my elbow, since now I haue more vse of him than Alchumists, in loue and charitie I take my leaue of you all, at least of all such as heere meane to leaue and read no further, and hast to the launching forth of my Dialogue.*







Haue with you to Saffron-walden.

DIALOGUS.

*Interlocutores, Senior Importuno, Grand Confiliadore,  
Domino Bentiuole, Don Carneades de bonne com-  
pagniola, Piers Pennileffe Respondent.*

*Importuno.*



HAT, *Tom* thou art very welcome.  
Where hast thou bin this long  
time ; walking in Saint *Faiths*  
Church vnder ground, that wee  
neuer could see thee? Or hast  
thou tooke thee a Chamber in *Cole-harbour*,  
where they liue in a continuall myst, betwixt two  
Brew-houses?

*Confili:* Indeed, we haue mist you a great while,  
as well spiritually as corporally ; that is, no lesse  
in the absence of your workes, than the want of  
your companie : but now, I hope, by your presence  
you will fully satisfie vs in either.

*Bentiuole*: Nay, I would he would but fully fatisfie and /pay one, which is the Doctor: for this I can assure him, he is run farre in arrearages with expectation, & to recouer himselfe it wilbe verie hard, except hee put twice dubble as much *aqua fortis* in his inke as he did before.

*Carnead*: No *aqua fortis*, if you loue me, for it almost poysoned and spoyled the fashion of *Stones* the fooles nose; and would you haue it be the destruction and desolation of a Doctor Foole now? What, content your selfe: a messe of *Tewksbury* mustard, or a dramme and a halfe of *Tower-hill* vineger, will seeme a high festiuall banquet, and make a famous coronation shew on this forlorne Ciuilians hungry table.

*Impor*: Tush, tush, you are all for iest, & make him be more careles of his credit than he wold be, by thus contemning and debasing his Aduersarie. Will you heare what is the vnited voyce and opinion abroad? Confidently they say, he is not able to answere him, he hath deferd it so long, & if he doo answere him, howfoeuer it be, it is nothing since hee hath been a whole Age about it, though I, for mine owne part, know the contrarie, & will engage my oath for him (if need be) that the most of this time they thinke him houering ouer the neast, he hath sat hatching of nothing but toies for priuate Gentlemen, &

neglected the peculiar bufines of his reputation, that fo deeply concerne[s] him, to follow vaine hopes and had I wift humours about Court, that make him goe in a thred-bare cloake, and fcarce pay for boate hire. Often enough I told him of this, if he would haue belee'ud me; but at length I am fure he findes it, and repents it all too late. In no companie I can come, but euerie minute of an howre, becaufe / they haue taken fpeciall notice of my loue towards him, they ftill will be tormenting me with one queftion or another, of what he is about, what means he to be thus retchles of his fame, or whither I am fure thofe things which are paff vnder his name heretofore were of his owne dooing, or to get an opinion of wit hee vfed fome other mans helpe vnder hande, that nowe hath vtterly giuen him ouer and forfaken him, whether he be dead or no, or forbidden to write, or in regard he hath publifht a treatife in Diuinitie makes a confcience to meddle any more in thefe controuerfies? with a thoufand other like idle interrogatories: whereto I anfwere nothing elfe, but that he is idle and new fangled, beginning many things but foone wearie of them ere hee be halfe entred, and that hee hath too much acquaintance in London euer to doo any good, being like a Curtezan that can deny no man, or a graue commonwealths Senatour that

thinkes he is not borne for himselfe alone; but as old *Laertes* in *Homers Odissæa*, *Dum reliqua omnia curabat, seipsum negligebat*, caring for all other things else, sets his owne estate at fixe and feauen. Iudge you, whom he takes for his best friends, what the end of this will be. A disgraced and condemned man he liues whiles *Haruey* thus liues vnanfwered, worfe than he that hath peaceably and quietly put vp an hundred bastinadoes, or suffred his face to be made a continual common wall for men to spit on. Spittle may be wip't off, and the print of a broken pate, or bruse with a cudgell quickly made whole and worne out of mens memories, but to be a villaine in print, or to be imprinted at London the reprobatest villaine euer went on two legs, for such is / *Gabriell Scurueies* (as in thy other booke thou termst him) his witles malicious testimony of thee, with other more rascally hedge rak't vp termes, familiar to none but roguish mortis and doxes, is an attainer that will sticke by thee for euer. A blot of ignominie it is, which though this age or, at the vtmost, such in this age as haue conuerst or are acquainted with thee, hold light and ridiculous, and no more but as a Bulls roaring and bellowing, and running horne mad at euery one in his way, when he is wounded by the Dogges, and almost bayted to death: yet there is an age to come,

which, knowing neither thee nor him, but by your feuerall workes iudging of either, will authorise all hee hath belched forth in thy reproach for found Gospell, since as the prouerbe is, *qui tacet consentire videtur*, thou holding thy peace, and not confuting him, seemes to confesse and confirme all whereof hee hath accused thee, and the innocent, vnheard, doo perish as guilty. Deceiue not thy selfe with the bad sale of his bookes, for though in no other mans handes, yet in his owne Deske they may bee founde after his death, whereby, while Printing lasts, thy disgrace may last, & the Printer (whose Copie it is) may leaue thy infamie in Legacie to his heyres, and his heyres to their next heyres, successiuely to the thirteenth and fourteenth generation, *Cum Priuilegio*, forbidding all other to Print those lewd lying Recordes of thy scandall and contumely, but the lineall offspring of their race *in sempiternum*. Hast thou not heard howe *Orpheus* wrote in the 2700. age of the world, whereas it is now 5596. and yet his memorie is fresh, his verses are extant, whereas all the Kings, that raignd and suruiued at that time, haue not so / much as the first letter of their names to posterity commended: the very same is thy case with those in *Germanie*, which being executed are neuer buried. Consider and deliberate well of it, and if it worke not effectually with thee I know

not what will. Neither, if thou beeſt ſo fenceleſſe that thou wilt not let it ſinke into thee, doo I hold thee worthy to be any thing but the ſinke of contempt, to be excluded out of all men of worths companies, & counted the abieſt ſcumme of all Poets and ballet-makers.

*Reſpond:* So you haue ſaid fir. Now, let mee haue my turne another-while, to counterbuſſe and beate backe all thoſe ouerthwart blowes wherewith you haue charged me.

*Benti:* No reaſon to the contrarie, but in any caſe be not chollerick, ſince the moſt of thoſe ſpeeches he hath vttered my owne eares can witneſſe to bee true, when as at diuers great meetings, and chiefe Ordinaries, I haue, Champion-like, tooke thy part, and euery one obieſted and articulated againſt thee, much after the ſame forme he hath expreſſed.

*Reſpond:* Will you haue patience, and you ſhall heare me expreſſely and roundly giue him his *quietus eſt*? To the firſt, wherein he concludes I am not able to anſwere him becauſe I haue deferred it ſo long; I anſwere that it followes not, in ſo much as many men that are able to pay their debts, doo not alwaies diſcharge and pay them preſently at one puſh; and ſecondly, or to the ſecond lye, where he ſayth, and I doo anſwere him it is nothing, ſince I haue beene a whole

age about it. If I list, I could proue his assertion to bee vnder age: but thats all one, I am content my witte should / take vppon it antiquitie this once, and nothing else in my defence I will alledge, but *Veritas Temporis filia*, it is onely time that reuealeth all things: wherefore, though in as short time as a man may learne to run at Tilt, I could haue gone thorough with inuention inough to haue run him thorough & confounded him, yet I must haue some further time to get perfect intelligence of his life and conuersation, one true point whereof, well fet downe, wil more excruciate & commacerate him, than knocking him about the eares with his owne stile in a hundred sheetes of paper. And this let me informe the Iury ouer and aboue, that age is no argument to make anie thing ill: & though graybeard drumbling ouer a Discourse be no crime, I am subiect too, yet in the behalfe of the crazed wits of that stamp, I will vphold, that it is no vpriight conclusion to say whatsoeuer is long laboured is lowfie and not worth a straw; since by that reason you might conclude *Dianas* temple at *Ephesus* to haue been a stinking Douecote or a Hog-sty, because it was 220. yere in building by the *Amazons*. Any time this 17. yere my aduerfary, *Frigius Pedagogus*, hath laid waste paper in pickle, and publisht some rags of treatises

againſt Maſter *Lilly* and mee, which I will iuſtifie haue lyne by him euer ſince the great matches of bowling and ſhooting on the *Thames* vpon the yce. But for my part, trie mee who will, and let anie man but finde mee meate and drinke, with the appurtenances, while I am playing the paper ſtainer, and fiſhing for pearle in the bot-tome of my tar-boxe, and but free me from thoſe outward encumbrances of cares that ouer-whelme mee, and let this Paralyticke Quackſaluer fill ten thouſand tunnes with *ſcele / rata ſinapis*, ſhrewiſh, ſnappiſh muſtard, as *Plautus* calls it, or botch and cobble vp as manie volumes as he can betwixt this and domeſday, and he ſhall ſee I will haue euerie one of them in the noſe ſtraight, and giue as ſuddaine extemporall answeres, as Pope *Silueſters* or Frier *Bacons* brazen head, which he would haue ſet vp on the Plain of *Salſbury*. As touching the vain hopes, and had I wiſt Court humours, which you ſay I follow, there is no Huſbandman but tills and ſowes in hope of a good crop, though manie times hee is deluded with a bad Harueſt. Court humours, like cutting of haire, muſt either bee obſerued when the Moone is new or in the full, or elſe no man will haue his hands full that gleanes after them. Not vnlikely it is they ſo queſtion you about the cauſe of my long ſtay, and their



wits being dull frozen, and halfe dead for want of matter of delight, (whereof *Poules Churchyard* was neuer worfe fuelled) like those in *Florida* or diuers Countreyes of the *Negroes*, that kindle fire by rubbing two sticks one against another; so to recreate and enkindle their decayed spirits, they care not how they set *Haruey* and mee on fire one against another, or whet vs on to consume our felues. But this Cock fight once past, I vow to turne a new leafe, and take another order with them, resoluing to take vp for the Word, or *Motto*, of my patience, *Perdere posse sat est*, it is enough that it is in my power to call a Sessions and trusse him vp when I list, concluding with the Poet, *Dum desint hostes, desit quoque causa triumphi*, as long as we have no enemies to trouble vs, it is no matter for anie Triumphs or bonfires: and as it was faide of the blacke Princes souldiers, that they cared for no spoyle but gold and siluer, or / feathers, so euer after I will care for no conquest or victorie, which carries not with it a present rich possibilitie of rayfing my decayed fortunes, and Causalier flourishing with a feather in my cappe (hey gallanta) in the face of enuie and generall Worlds opinion. As newfangled and idle, and prostituting my pen like a Curtizan, is the next *Item* that you taxe me with; well it may and it may not bee so, for neither will

I deny it nor will I grant it; onely thus far Ile goe with you, that twice or thrise in a month, when *res est angusta domi*, the bottome of my purse is turned downeward, & my conduit of incke will no longer flow for want of reparations, I am faine to let my Plow stand still in the midst of a furrow, and follow some of these newfangled *Galiardos* and *Senior Fantasticos*, to whose amorous *Villanellas* and *Quipassas*, I prostitute my pen in hope of gaine, but otherwise there is no newfangelenes in mee but pouertie, which alone maketh mee so vnconstant to my determined studies; nor idleneffe, more then discontented idle trudging from place to place, too and fro, and prosecuting the meanes to keep mee from idleneffe. My Doctour *Vanderhulk*, peradventure, out of this my indigent confession may take occasion to work piteously: It is no matter, I care not, for many a faire day agoe haue I proclaimed my selfe to the worlde *Piers Pennileffe*, and sufficient petigrees can I shewe to prooue him my elder brother. What more remaineth behinde of the condemned estate I stand in, till this *Domine Dewse-ace* be confwapped, & sent with a paire of newe shooes on his feete, and a scrowle in his hand to Saint *Peter*, like a *Russian* when he is buried: /as also of the immortality of the Print, & how though not this age, yet another age three

yeares after the building vp the top of Powles steeple, may baffull and infamize my name when I am in heauen, & shall neuer feele it, in foure words I will defeate, and lay desolate. Forfooth (bee it knowne vnto you) I haue prouided harping yrons to catch this great Whale: and this *Gobin a grace ap Hannikin*, by Gods grace shall be met and combatted. Yet this I must tell you, fir, in the way of friendship twixt you & mee, your graue fatherly forecasting *Forasmuch*, and vrging of posteritie and after ages, whose cradle makers are not yet begot; that they may doo this, and they may do that, is a stale imitation of this heathen *Gregorie Huldricke*, my *Antigonist*. And thus, I trust all reckonings are euen twixt you and mee.

*Impor*: Nay, I promise thee, thou hast giuen me my Pasport, and I know not what to say, now thou sayst he shall be answerd.

*Benti*: I am very glad, for thy credits sake, that thou perseuer in that purpose, but more glad would I bee to see it abroad and publisht.

*Resp*: Content your selfe, so you shall; although it hath gone abroad with his Keeper any time this quarter of this yeare, but as profounde a reason as any I haue alleag'd yet, of the long stay and keeping it backe, was, that I might fulfill that olde verse in *Ouid*, *Ad metam properate simul tunc*

*plena voluptas*, as much to say as march together merrily, and then there will be lusty dooings and found sport, so did I stay for some company to march with mee, that wee might haue made round worke, and gone thorough fitch: but since all this while they come not forward according to promise / but breake their daye, as the King of *Spaine* did with *Sebastian* King of *Portugall*, about his meeting him at *Guandulopeia*, when they should haue gone together to the Battaile of *Alcazar*, *veiah diabol* Saint *George*, and a tickling pipe of *Tobacco*, and then pell mell, all alone haue amongst them, if there were ten thousand of them.

*Carn*: Faith well said, I perceiue thou fearst no colours.

*Resp*: Whatfoeuer I feare, Ile force *Ienkin Heyderry derry* both to feare and beare my colours, and suite his cheekes (if there be one pimple of shame in them) in a perfecter red, than anie *Venice* dye.

*Confil*: Vengeance on that vnluckie dye, may hee crie, like a swearing shredded gamester, that loofeth at one set all that euer he is worth: but I prythee (in honestie) if thou hast anie of the papers of thy Booke about thee, shew vs some of them, that like a great Inquest, we may deliuer our verdict before it come to the *Omnigatherum* of Towne and Countrey.

*Respon*: Then gather your selues together in a ring, and, *Grand Confiliadore*, be you the grand commander of silence (which is a chiefe Office in the Emperour of *Russiaes* Court), for heere it is in my flecue that will besliue him: yet, if I be not deceiued, some part of the Epistle I haue read to you heretofore.

*Import*: I, to the Barber: such a thing I well remember, but what Barber it was, or where he dwelt, directly thou neuer toldst vs.

*Respon*: Yes, that I haue both towld and booke him too: neuertheles (for your better vnderstanding) know it is one *Dick Litchfield*, the Barber of *Trinity Colledge*, a rare / ingenuous odde merry Greeke, who (as I haue heard) hath translated my *Piers Pennileffe* into the *Macaronicall* tongue: wherein I wish hee had been more tongue-tide, since, in some mens incensed iudgements, it hath too much tongue alreadie, being aboue 2 yeres since maimedly translated into the French tongue, and in the English tongue so rascally printed and ill interpreted, as heart can thinke, or tongue can tell. But I cannot tell how it is growen to a common fashon amongst a number of our common ill liuers, that whatsoeuer tongue (like a spaniels tongue) doth not licke their aged soares and fawne on them, they conclude it to be an adders tongue to sting them: and

wheras wittie *Aefope* did buy vp all the tongues in the market hee could spie, as the best meate hee esteemed of, they (by all meanes possible), euen out of the buckles of theyr girdles, labor to plucke forth the tongs, for feare they should plucke in their vnafiate greedie paunches too straight.

*Carn*: O peace, peace, exercise thy writing tongue, and let vs haue no more of this plaine English.

*Resp*: With a good will, agreed: &, like *Mahomets* angels in the *Alcheron*, that are said to haue eares stretching from one end of heauen to the other, let your attention be indefinite & without end, for thus I begin.

*Mascula virorum*, Saint *Mildred* and Saint *Agapite*! more Letters yet from the Doctor? nay then, we shall be sure to haue a whole *Grauesend* Barge full of Newes, and heare soundly of all matters on both eares. Out vppon it, heere's a packet of Epistling, as bigge as a Packe of Woollen cloth, / or a stack of salt-fish. Carrier, didst thou bring it by wayne, or on horse-backe? By wayne, fir, & it hath crackt me three axeltrees, wherefore I hope you will confider me the more. *Heauie* newes, *heauie* newes, take them againe, I will neuer open them. Ah quoth he (deepe fighting)

to mee, I wot, they are the heauieſt, whoſe Cart hath cryde creake vnder them fortie times euerie furlong: wherefore, if you bee a good man, rather make mud walls with them, mend high wayes, or damme vp quagmires with them, than thus they ſhuld endamage mee to my eternall vndoing. I, hearing the fellow ſo forlorne and out of comfort with his luggage, gaue him his *Charons Naulum*, or ferry three half pence, & ſo diſmiſt him to go to the place from whence he came, and play at *Lodum*. But when I came to vnrip and vnbumbaſt this *Gargantuan* bag-pudding, and found nothing in it but dogs-tripes, fwines liuers, oxe galls, and ſheepes gutts, I was in a bitterer chafe than anie Cooke at a long Sermon when his meate burnes. Doo the Philoſophers (ſaid I to my ſelfe) hold that letters are no burden, & the lighteſt and eaſieſt houſhold ſtuffe a man can remooue? Ile be ſworne vpon *Anthonie Gueuaras* golden Epistles, if they will, there's not ſo much toyle in remoouing the ſiedge from a Towne, as in taking an inuentorie ſurway of anie one of them. Letters doo you terme them? they may be Letters patents well enough for their tediousnes: for no lecture at Surgeons Hall vppon an Anatomie, may compare with them in longitude. Why, they are longer than the Statutes of Clothing, or the Charter of *London*.

Will ye haue the fimple truth, without any deuices or playing vpon it? *Gabriell Haruey*, my stale Gull, & the onely / pure Orator in fenfeles riddles or *Packstonisme*, that euer this our litle fhred or feparate angle of the world fuckled vp, not content to haue the naked scalp of his credit new couered with a falfe periwig of commendations, and fo returne to his fathers houle in peace, and there fustaine his hungry bodie with wythered fcallions and greene cheefe, hath fince that time deeply forfworne himfelf in an arbitrement of peace, &, after the ancient cuftome of Scottifh amitie, vnawares proclaimed open warres a frefh in a whole *Alexandrian* librarie of wafte paper. *Piers his Supererogation*, or *Nafhes Saint Fame*, pretely & quirkingly he chriftens it; and yet not fo much to quirke or croffe me thereby, as to bleffe himfelfe and make his booke fell, did hee giue it that title: for hauing found, by much fhipwrackt experience, that no worke of his, abfolute vnder hys owne name, would paffe, he vfed heretofore to drawe *Sir Philip Sydney*, *Master Spencer*, and other men of higheft credit, into euerie pild pamphlet he fet foorth; and now that he can no longer march vnder their Enfignes, (from which I haue vtterly chac'd him in my *Foure Letters intercepted*) he takes a new leffon out of *Plutarch*, in making benefit of his enemye,



& borrows my name, and the name of *Piers Pennileffe* (one of my Bookes), which he knew to be most saleable, (passing at the least through the pikes of fixe Impressions) to helpe his bedred stuffe to limpe out of *Powles Churchyard*, that else would haue laine vnreprovably spittled at the Chandlers. Such a huge drifat of duncerie it is he hath dungd vp against me, as was neuer seene since the raigne of *Auerrois*. O tis an vnconscionable vast gorbellied Volume, bigger bulkt than a Dutch Hoy, and farre / more boystrous and cumbersome than a paire of *Swissers* omnipotent galeaze breeches. But, it shuld seeme, he is asham'd of the incomprehensible corpulencie thereof himselfe, for at the ende of the 199. Page, hee beginnes with one 100 againe, to make it seeme little (if I lye you may look and convince mee); & in halfe a quire of paper besides hath left the Pages vnfigured. I haue read that the giant *Antæus* Shield askt a whole Elephants hyde to couer it, *bona fide* I vtter it, scarce a whole Elephants hyde & a half, would serue for a couer to this *Gogmagog*, Iewish *Thalmud* of absurdities. Nay, giue the diuell his due, and there an ende, the Giant that *Magellan* found at *Caput sanctæ crucis*, or Saint *Christophers* picture at *Antwerpe*, or the monstrous images of *Sesostres*, or the *Aegyptian Rapsinates* are but dwarffes in com-

parifon of it. But one Epiftle thereof, to *Iohn Wolfe* the Printer, I tooke and weighed in an Ironmongers fcales, and it counterpoyfeth a Cade of Herring, and three Holland Cheefes. You may belecue me if you will, I was faine to lift my chamber doore off the hindges, onely to let it in, it was fo fulfome a fat *Bonarobe* and terrible *Rounceuall*. Once I thought to haue cald in a Cooper, that went by and cald for worke, and bid him hoope it about like the tree at *Grays-Inne* gate, for feare 'it fhould burft, it was fo beaftly; but then I remembred mee the boyes had whoopt it fufficiently about the ftreetes, and fo I let it alone for that infant. Credibly it was once rumord about the Court, that the Guard meant to trie mafteries with it before the Queene, and in ftead of throwing the fledge or the hammer, to hurle it foorth at the armes ende for a wager. I, I, euerie one maye ham/mer vpon it as they please, but if they will hit the nayle on the head pat, as they fhould, to nothing fo aptly can they compare it as *Africke*, which being an vnbounded fretcht out Continent, equiualent in greatnes with moft Quarters of the Earth, yet neuertheles is (for the moft part) ouer-fpred with barraine fands: fo this his Babilonian towre, or tome of confutation, fwelling in dimension & magnitude aboue all the prodigious commentaries and familiar Epiftles

that euer he wrote, is notwithstanding, more drie, barraine, and sandie in substance, than them all. Peruse but the Ballet, *In Sandon soyle as late befell*, and you will be more soundly edified by fixe parts. Sixe and thirtie sheetes it comprehendeth, which with him is but fixe and thirtie full points; for he makes no more difference twixt a sheete of paper and a full point, than there is twixt two blacke puddings for a pennie, and a pennie for a paire of blacke puddings. Foule euill goe with it, I wonder you will prate and tattle of fixe and thirtie full points, so compendiously trust vp (as may bee) in fixe and thirtie sheetes of paper, when as those are but the shortest proverbs of his wit; for he neuer bids a man good morrow, but he makes a speech as long as a proclamation; nor drinke to anie, but he reads a Lecture of three howers long, *De Arte bibendi*. O tis a precious apothegmaticall Pedant, who will finde matter inough to dilate a whole daye of the first inuention of *Fy, fa, fum*, I smell the bloud of an English-man: and if hee had a thousand pound, hee hath vowd to consume it euerie doyt, to discover and search forth certaine rare Mathematicall Experimentes; as for example, that of tying / a flea in a chaine, (put in the last edition of the great Chronicle) which if by any industrie hee could atchieue, his owne name beeing so generally odious

throughout *Kent* and *Christendome*, hee would presently transforme & metamorphize it from Doctour *Haruey* to doctour *Ty*, (of which stile there was a famous Musition some few yeres since) resolving, as the last cast of his maintenance, altogether to liue by carrying that Flea, like a monster, vp and downe the countrey, teaching it to doo trickes, hey come aloft Iack, like an ape ouer the chaine. If you would haue a flea for the nonce, that you might keepe for a breeder, why this were a stately flea indeede to get a braue race of fleas on: your fly in a boxe is but a drumble-bee in cōparifon of it; with no expence at all (on your chin like a witches familiar) you might feed it, and let the chaine hang downe on your breast, like a stale, greasie Courtiers chaine, with one strop. Alacke and weladay, too too inconsiderately aduised was this our Poeticall *Gabriell*, when hexameterly entranced, he cride out,

O blessed health, blessed wealth, and blessed  
abundance,

O that I had these three for the losse of 30  
Commenfments.

when he should haue exclaimd,

O that I had this flea for the losse of 30 Com-  
menfments.

Peraduenture, he thinkes thus flightly to steale

away with a Flea in his eare, but I must flea his asses skin ouer his eares a little handsomer, ere wee part. Those that bee so disposed to take a view of him, ere hee bee come to the full Midfommer Moone, and raging Calentura of his wretchednes, here let them behold his liuely counterfet and portraiture, not in the pantofles of his prosperitie, as he was when he libeld against my Lord of *Oxford*, but in the single-soald pumpes of his aduersitie, with his gowne cast off, vntrussing, and readie to beray himselfe vpon the newes of the going in hand of my booke.

*The picture of Gabriell Haruey  
as he is readie to let fly  
vpon Ajax.*



If you aske why I haue put him in round hose, that vsually weares Venetians? it is because I would make him looke more dapper & plump and round vpon it, wheras otherwise he looks like a case of tooth-pikes, or a Lute pin put in a sute of apparell. Gaze vpon him who list, for, I tell you, I am not a little proud of my workmanship, and, though I

fay it, I haue handled it so neatly, and so sprightly, and withall ouzled, gidumbled, muddled, and drizled it so finely, that I forbid euer a Hanns Boll, Hanns Holbine, or Hanns Mullier of them all (let them but play true with the face) to amend it, or come within fortie foote of it. Away, away, Blockland, Truffer, Francis de Murre, and the whole generation of them will sooner catch the

*Painters  
sharp hand-  
ling.*

murre and the pose tenscore times, ere they doo a thing one quarter so masterly.

Yea, (without Kerry merry buffe be it spoken) put a whole million of Iohannes Mabuiffes of them together, and they shall not handle their matters at sharpe so handsomly as I.

*Benti* : From sharpe to come to the poynt : as farre as I can learne, thou hast all the aduantage of the quarell, since both the first and last firebrand of dissention betwixt you was toft by the Doctour.

*Respond* : Tossing (by your fauour) is proper to the sea ; and so (like the sea) doth hee tosse water, and not fire.

*Benti* : That is toft, or cast water on fire : if hee did so, he is the wifer.

*Respon* : On a fire of sea-cole you meane, to make it burne brighter.

*Benti* : A fire that the sea will coole, or *Haruey* find water inough to quench, if you looke not too it the better.

*Respon* : I warrant, take you no care, Ile looke to his water well enough.

*Imp* : But me thought euen now thou contemndst him, because hee toft water and not fire ; whereas in my iudgement, there is not a hairs difference betwixt being burnd and being drownd, since death is the best of either, and the paine of dying is not more tedious of the one than of the other.

*Respon* : O, you must not conclude so desperate, for euerie tossing billow brings not death in the mouth of it : besides, if the worst come to the worst, a good swimmer may doo much, whereas fire *rapit omnia secum*, sweepeth cleane where it feazeth.

*Importun* : I, but haue you not heard that broken peece of a vearse, *Currenti cede furori* ; giue place to fire or furie, and you shall quickly see it consume it felfe.

*Respon* : / A stale puddings end, by that reason you may as well come vpon mee with *Tempus edax rerum, quid non consumitis anni* ? As though there is anie thing so eternall and permanent, that consumes and dies not after all his fire of life is spent. For mee, I know I shall liue, and not die, till I haue digd the graues of all my enemies : and that the fire of my wit will not bee spent, till (as amongst the *Samogetes* and *Chaldeans*) I get it to be worshipt as a god of those whom it most cōfounds : and as diuers of the *Aethiopians* curse

the funne when it rifeth, and worſhip it when it fetteth ; ſo, howeuer they curſe and raile vpon mee in the beginning, I will compell them to fall downe and worſhip mee ere I ceaſe or make an end, crying vpon their knees *Ponuloi naſhe*, which is, in the *Ruſſian* tongue, Haue mercie vpon vs : but I will not haue mercie or be pacifide, till I haue left them ſo miſerable, that very horſes ſhal hardly abſtaine from weeping for them, as they did for the death of *Cæſar* ; and if they haue but euer a dog that lou'd them, he ſhall die for griefe, to view his maſters in that plight.

*Conſil* : In anie caſe leaue this big thunder of words, wherein thou vainly ſpendſt thy ſpirits, before the puſh of the battaile ; and if thou haſt anie ſuch exhaled heat of reuenge in the vpper region of thy braine, let it lighten and flaſh preſently in thy aduerſaries face, and not a farre off threaten thus idely.

*Reſpon* : Threaten idely, ſaid you ? Nay ſure, Ile performe as much as hee that went about to make the dyuing boate twixt *Douer* and *Callis*, and as lightning and thunder neuer lightly goe aſunder, ſo in my ſtile will I temper them both together, mixing thunder with lightning, / and lightning with thunder, that is, in dreadfull terror with ſtripes, & ſound thruſts with lowd threats. Tell mee, haue you a minde to anie thing in the



Doctors Booke? speake the word, and I will helpe you to it vpon the naile; whether it bee his words, his metaphors, his methode, his matter, his meeters. Make your choyce, for I meane to vse you most stately.

*Carr*: Then, good gentle Friend (if you will) let's haue halfe a dozen spare-ribs of his rethorique, with tart sauce of taunts correspondent, a mightie chyne of his magnificentest elocution, and a whole furloyne of his substantiallest sentences and similes.

*Resp*: And shall, I am for you; Ile serue you of the best you may assure your selfe: with a continuat *Tropologicall* speach I will astonish you, all to bee-spiced & dredged with sentences and allegories, not hauing a crum of any cost bestowed vpon it more than the Doctors owne cooquerie.

*Import*: *Tropologicall*! O embotched and truculent. No French gowtie leg, with a gamash vpon it, is so gotchie and boystrous.

*Confi*: It sounds like the ten-fold ecchoing rebound of a dubble Cannon in the aire; and is able to spoyle anie little mouth, that offers to pronounce it.

*Resp*: Gentlemen, take God in your minde, & nere feare you this word *Tropologicall*, for it is one of *Dick Harueys* sheepes trattells in his *Lambe of God*.

*Imp:* I, *Dick Harueys*, that may wel be ; for I neuer heard there was more in him, than would hard and scant serue him to make a Collation : but for the Doctor, trie it who will, his stile is not easie to be matcht, being commended by diuers (of good iudgement) for / the best that ere they read.

*Respond:* Amongst the which number, is a red bearded thrid-bare Causalier, who (in my hearing) at an ordinarie, as he sat fumbling the dice after supper, fell into these tearmes (no talke before leading him to it): There is such a Booke of *Harueys* (meaning this his last Booke against mee) as I am a Souldiour and a Gentleman, I protest I never met with the like contriued pile of pure English. O it is deuine and most admirable, & so farre beyond all that euer he publisht heretofore, as day-light beyond candle-light, or tinfell or leafe-gold aboue arsedine ; with a great many more excessiue praises he bestowed vpon it : which authentically I should haue beleeued, if immediately vpon the nicke of it, I had not seene him shrug his shoulders, and talk of going to the *Bathe*, and after, like a true Pandar (so much the fitter to be one of *Gabriels* Patrons), grew in commending, to yong gentlemen, two or three of the most detested loathsom whores about *London*, for peereles beauteous Paragons, & the pleasingest wenches

in the world ; wherby I gueſt, his iudgement might be infected as wel as his body ; & he that wold not flick ſo to extoll ſtale rotten lac'd mutton, will, like a true *Millanoys*, fucke figges out of an aſſes fundament, or doo anie thing. I more than halfe ſuſpect thoſe whom you preferre for the beſt iudgements, are of the ſame ſtampe ; or if they be not, I wil ſet a new ſtampe on their iudgments, hauing (to let them ſee their dotage and error, and what his ſtile is they make ſuch a miracle ot) muſterd together, in one galimaſtrie or ſhort Oration, moſt of the ridiculous ſenſeleſſ ſentences, finicall, flaunting phraſes, and termagant inkhorne tearmes throughout his / Booke, and fram'd it in his owne praiſe and apologie, becauſe I would cut his cloake with the Wooll, though *Lilly* and *Nafhe* neuer ſo cry *Non placet* thereat. Auditors awake your attention, and here expect the cleare repurified ſoule of truth, without the leaſt ſhadow of fiction ; the vnflattered picture of Pedantiſme, that hath no one ſmile or crinkle more than it ſhould : for I deeply auow, on my faith and ſaluation, if he were a Doctor of gold, here in his owne clothes he ſhal appeare to you, & not ſo much as a knot to his winding ſheete, or corner tip to the ſmalleſt ſeluage of his garments I will inferſt ; only a needle and thred to truſſe vp his trinkets more roundly (vppon better aduice) I

am determined to lend him, in hope it may be his thred of life, and euen by that fingle bountie dubble ftitch him vnto me to be my deuoted beadsman till death, but not a pinnes head or a moaths pallet roome gets he of anie farther contribution. Hem, cleare your throates, and fpit foundly ; for now the pageant begins, and the ftuffe by whole Cart-loads comes in.

An Oration, including moft of the mis-created words and sentences in the Doctors Booke.

*Renowmed and amicable Readers, from whom it is not concealed, that Silence is a flauē in a chaine, and the Pen the hot ſhot of the muſket.*

*Benti :* Marke, marke, a ſentence, a ſentence.

*Orati.*

*that when the caitife Planet raigneth, of Punical war ther is no end, & of the counter-tenor of an offended Sirē no ela.*

*Carne :* / Therē two, keepe tally.

*Orati.*

*Tell mee (I pray you) was euer Pegafus a cow in a cage, Mercury a mouſe in a cheeſe, Dexteritie a dog in a dublet, Ledgerdemaine a ſlow-worme, Viuacitie a lazy bones, Entelechie a ſlug-plum, Humanitie a*

*Spittle-man, Rhetorique a dummerell, Poetrie a tumbler, Historie a banqrout, Philosophie a broker?*

*Confili* : I marry, now it workes.

*Respon* : I bely him not a word ; iust as it is there, in his owne text it comes together.

*Orati.*

*Why should I then, that haue been an incorruptible Areopage,*

*Benti* : Stay that fame *Areopage*, hee is a forreyner newe come ouer : let vs examine him if hee bee the Queenes friend or no, ere he passe.

*Orati.*

*without anie pregnant cause, be thus prestigiously besiedged, and marked with an Asteriske, by them that are superficiall in Theory?*

*Carne* : On my vertuous chastitie, & in veritie, pregnant, prestigious, superficiall and pretie.

*Orati.*

*In manie extraordinarie remarkeable energeticall lines, and perfunctorie pamphlets, both in ambidexteritie and omnidexteritie, together with matters adiophorall, haue I disbalased my minde, & not let slip the least occasionet of aduantage, to acquaint the world with my pregnant propositions, and resolute Aphorismes.*

*Confili* : That word Aphorismes Greenes Exequutors may claime from him ; for while hee

liu'd he had no / goods nor chattles in commoner vse than it.

*Import*: Away, away, I cannot be perswaded hee wold euer come forth with anie one of these balductum bastardly termes.

*Respond*: You cannot: then cannot I be perswaded that you cannot be perswaded; since I haue as much reason not to credit your bare assertion, where you say you are perswaded it is not so, as you to distrust my deep vehement protestatiōs, wherein I wold perswade you it is so: but if none of these perswasions or protestations may preuaile with your incredulitie, bring me to the booke, if you please (the Doctours Booke *subintelligitur*) and that will soone resolute you.

*Import*: It shall not need, I beleue thee, since thou standst in it so seriously: yet I wonder thou setst not downe, in figures in the margent, in what line, page, & folio, a man might find euerie one of these fragments, which would haue much satisfied thy Readers.

*Respon*: What, make an *Errata* in the midst of my Booke, and haue my margent bescratcht (like a Merchants booke) with these roguish Arismetrique gibbets or flesh-hookes, and cyphers, or round oos, lyke pismeeres egges? Content your selfe, I will neuer do it: or if I were euer minded to doo it, I could not, since (as I told you some

few leaues before) in more than a quarter of that his tumbrell of Confutation, he hath left the Pages vnfigured ; foreseeing by deuination (belike) that I should come to disfigure them.

*Confil*: I warrant thee I, thou hast figur'd him well enough as it is ; and if thou hadst taken the paynes of quotations or figures, as he would haue thee, I doubt whether there be anie would euer haue bestowed so much / paines to conferre or examine them.

*Carnead*: On forward good *Piers Respondent* with your Oration, for I am hungrie vpon it ; and with this I haue heard alreadie, my appetite is nothing stancht, but rather whetted.

*Respond*: Beare witnes my masters, if hee dye of a surfet, I cannot doo withall, it is his owne seeking, not mine : as long as I haue it, I am no niggard of it, at all aduentures I will set it before him.

*Oration.*

*Omitting* (sicco pede) *my encomiasticall Orations, and mercuriall and martiall discourses of the terribilitie of war, in the ætinue and cheualrous vaine, euery way cōparable with the Caualcads of Bellerophon, or Don Alphōso d'Aualos, my Seraphicall visions in Queene Poetrie, queint theorickes, melancholy proiects, and pragmaticall discourses ; whose beau-desert, and rich æconomie, the inspiredest Heliconists & arch-patrons*

of our new Omnisicians, haue not stickt to equipage with the ancient Quinquagenarians, Centurions, and Chiliarkes : notwithstanding all which Idees of monstrous excellencie, some smirking singularists, brag Reformists, and glicking Remembrancers (not with the multiplying spirite of the Alchumist, but the villanist) seeke to be masons of infinite contradiction ; they (I say) with their frumping Contras, tickling interiections, together with their vehement incensiuies and alleetiuies, as if they would be the onely A per se a's, or great A's of puissance, like Alexander (whom yet some of our moderne Worthies disdaine to haue sceptred the est Amen of valure), commense redoutable Monomachies against mee, and the dead honnie-bee my brother.

*Bentiu :* / A per se, con per se, tittle, est, Amen !  
Dost thou not feele thy selfe spoyld ? why, he comes vppon thee (man) with a whole Horn-booke.

*Import :* What a supernaturall *Hibble de beane* it is, to call his brother a dead honnie-bee ?

*Confil :* I laughd at nothing so much as that word *Archpatrons*. Goe thy wayes, thought I : thou art a Ciuilian, and maist well fetch metaphors from the Arches : but thou shalt neuer fish anie monie from thence whilest thou liu'ft.

*Carm :* Troth, I would hee might for me (that's all the harme I wish him), for then we neede neuer



with the Playes at *Powles* vp againe, but if we were wearie with walking, and loth to goe too farre to seeke sport, into the Arches we might step, and heare him plead; which would bee a merrier Comedie than euer was old Mother *Bomby*. As for an instance: suppose hee were to sollicite some cause against Martinists, were it not a iest as right sterling as might be, to see him stroke his beard thrice, & begin thus. *Graue Heliconists, seraphicall Omniscians, & the only Centurions, Quinquagenarians and Chiliarks of our time; may it please you to be aduertised, how that certaine smirking Singularists, brag Reformists, and glicking Remembrancers, not with the multiplying spirit of the Alchumist, but the villanist, haue sought to be Masons of infinite contradiction, and with their melancholy proiects, frumping contras, tickling interiections, and vehement incensues & allectives, in all pragmaticall terribilitie, commense redoubtable Monomachies against you, and the beau-desert & Ideas of your encomiasticall Church gouernment, and particular and peculiar æconomies. O we should haue the Proctors / and Registers as busie with their Table-books as might bee to gather phrases, and all the boyes in the Towne would be his clients to follow him. Marry it were necessarie the Queenes Decypherer should bee one of the High Commissioners; for else other-while he would blurt out such Brachmannicall*

*fulde-fubs*, as no bodie should be able to vnderstand him.

*Respon*: You make too long gloses on the text, attend how it followes.

*Oration.*

*But Mercury sublimed is some-way a coy & stout fellow.*

*Ben*: Verie true, for it is a good medicine for the itch.

*Oration.*

*and spite as close a secretarie as a scummer,*

*Carnead*: Secretarie Spite and Secretarie Scummer, giue me your hands: I beseech you, what Noble-men about Court doo you belong too?

*Oration.*

*Resolution a forward mate, and Valour a braue man ;*

*Bentiv*: O braue man, will you buy a braue dog?

*Oration.*

*Impudencie and Slaunder, two arrant vagabonds.*

*Carnead*: I crie you mercie, I alwaies tooke them for the two Brothers.

*Oration.*

*The world neuer such a Scogin as now, and the diuell neuer such a knaue as now.*

*Bentiu*: What a diuell ayles he to rayle fo

vppon a poore painfull diuell, that dooes for him all he can?

*Respond:* Whist, silence on euerie hand; for here is the verie *S. Georges* robes of rhetorique, a speach that I haue tooke vp by the lumpe, as it lies in his Booke.

*Oration. /*

*What's the saluation of Dauid Gorge? A Nullitie. What the deification of H. N.? A Nullitie. What the glorification of Ket? A Nullitie. What the sanctification of Browne? A Nullitie. What the communitie of Barrow? A Nullitie. What the plausibilitie of Martin? A Nullitie; yea and a wofull Nullitie, and a piteous Nullitie.*

*Carnead:* What a piteous noyse, like a spirit in a wal, doth he here make with his Nullities? I should sure run out of my wits, if one should come to my chamber doore at midnight, with nothing but such a dismall note of A Nullitie, a Nullitie!

*Oration.*

*Nay, be you Load-stones to exhale what I say. Martin is a Guerra, Browne a browne-bill, & Barrow a wheel-barrow; Ket a kight, H. N. an o. k.; and to conclude, as the Wheele was an ancient Hieroglyphicke amongst the Aegyptians, so some tooles are false prophets.*

*Bentiu:* Thats the cause wee haue so manie bad

workmen now a daies : put vp a Bill againſt them next Parliament.

*Import :* But if he had ſaid, manie men haue ſome tooles that are litle for their profit, he had hit the mark ſomewhat nearer.

*Oration.*

*Iudas, the Gaulonite, in the raigne of Herod was a hot toaſt,*

*Carn :* It cannot chooſe but he lou'd ale well, then.

*Oration.*

*and preſent examples we haue, as hot as freſh, that he that hath time hath life.*

*Conſil :* / In good time be it ſpoken.

*Import :* A good admonition to Muſitions to keepe time with their inſtruments, if they be defirous to liue long.

*Oration.*

*Duke Allocer on his luſtie cock-horſe is a hot familiar,*

*Carnead :* Let him but liue in London halfe a yeare, and there be them that wil take him downe and coole him, were he twice as hot.

*Oration.*

*and no ſuch Arte memoratiue as the crab-tree deſke :*

*Conſil :* No ; what ſay you to a crab-tree cudgell ? if it were well huſbanded about his

shoulders, I thinke it would make him remember it time enough.

*Oration.*

*for, vnder correction of the arte notorie be it spoken, enuie is a soaking register, and mortall fewde the claw of an adamant.*

*Import:* Hath adamant such sharpe clawes? that makes it hold yron so fast, when it hath it.

*Respon:* Harke, harke, how hee praiseth Sir Philip Sidney.

*Oration.*

*Sweete Sir Philip Sidney, he was the Gentleman of curtesie and the very Esquire of industrie?*

*Carnea:* The Esquire of industrie? O scabbed scald squire (*Scythian Gabriell*) as thou art, so vnder-foot to commend the cleereft myrrour of true Nobilitie.

*Consil:* What a mischief does he taking anie mans name in his vlcereous mouth? that, being so festred and ranckled with barbarisme, is able to rust and canker it, were it neuer so resplendent.

*Respon:* / In all his praises he is the most forespoken and vnfortunate vnder heauen, & those whom he feruentest striues to grace and honour, he most dishonors and disgraceth by some vncircumcised fluttish epithite or other: and euen to talke treason he may be drawn vnwares, and neuer

haue anie fuch intent, for want of difcretion how to manage his words.

*Bent*: It is a common fcoffe amongft vs, to call anie foolifh prodigall yong gallant, the gentleman or floure of curtefie; & (if it were wel fcand) I am of the opinion, with the fame purpofe hee did it to fcoffe and deride *Sir Philip Sydney*, in calling him the Gentleman of curtefie, and the verie efquire of induftrie.

*Respond*: Poore tame-witted filly *Quirko*, on my confcience I dare excufe him, hee had neuer anie fuch thought, but did it in as meere earneft, as euer in commendation of himfelfe and his brothers hee writ thefe two verfes;

*Singular are thefe three, Iohn, Richard, Gabriel  
Haruy,*

*For Logique, Philofophie, Rhetorique, Aftronomie.*

as alfo, in like innocent innocent wel meaning, added he this that enfues.

*Oration.*

*His Entelechy was fine Greece, and the fineft Tufcanifme in graine.* Although I could tickle him with a contrarie prefident, where he cafts Tufcanifme, as a horrible crime, in a Noble-mans teeth.

*Carnead*: Bodie of mee, this is worfe than all the reft, he fets foorth *Sir Philip Sidney* in the verie ftyl of a Diers Signe. As if hee fhould haue faid :

HEERE  
 WITHIN THIS  
 PLACE IS ONE THAT DI-  
 ETH ALL KINDE OF EN-  
 TELECHY IN FINE GREECE,  
 AND THE FINEST TVSCA-  
 NISME IN GRAINE THAT  
 MAY BEE, OR ANY COLOVR  
 ELSE YE WOLD DESIRE. AND  
 SO GOD SAVE THE QVEENE. /

*Bentiu.* More Copie, more Copie, we leefe a great deale of time foe want of Text.

*Imp.* Apace, out with it ; and let vs nere stand paufing or looking about, fince we are thus far onward.

*Oration.*

*But fome had rather be a Pol-cat with a ftinking ftirre, than a Muske-cat with gracious fauour.*

*Bentiu.* I fmell him, I fmell him: the wrongs that thou haft offred him are fo intollerable, as they would make a Cat fpeake ; therefore looke to it *Nafbe*, for with one Pol-cat perfume or another, hee will poyfon thee, if he be not able to anfwere thee.

*Carnead.* Pol-cat and Muske-cat? there wants but a Cat a mountaine, and then there would be old fcratching.

*Bentiu.* I, but not onely no ordinarie Cat, but a Muske-cat, and not onely a Muske-cat, but a

*Muske-cat with gracious sauour* (which founds like a Princes stile *Dei gratia*). Not *Tibault* or *Ifegrim*, Prince of Cattes, were euer endowed with the like Title.

*Respon.* / Since you can make so much of a little, you shall haue more of it.

*Oration.*

*To utter the entrayles of a sphericall heart in few syllables, Muske is a sweete curtezan, and sugar and honey daintie hipocrytes.*

*Bentiu.* O sweeter and sweeter, some bodie lend me a hand-kercher, that I may carry some home in my pocket for my little God-sonne.

*Carnead.* Madame Muske, if you be a curtezan (as the Doctour informes vs) sure you haue drest a number of my friends sweetly, haue you not? But you were neuer otherwise like, for mans appaile & womans appaile, all was one to you; and some mysterie there was in it, that they alwayes cride, Foh, what a stinke is heere? and stopt their noses when you came neere them. For your worships, Master Sugar & Master Honie, (be you likewise such daintie hipocrytes as he giues testimony) I doubt not but at one time or other we shall taste you.

*Respond.* Stay, let me looke vpon it: I, it is the fame, right *Ifenborough* good, or neuer trust mee. A speech or sudden exclamation, which, after hee



had been in a deadly found for fixe or seauen houres (vppon what fear-procured sickness I leaue you to imagine) was the first words vpon his reuiuing he vttered.

*Oration.*

*O Humanitie my Lullius, and Diuinitie my Paracelsus.*

*Consl.* As much to say, as all the humanitie he hath, is gathered out of *Lullius*, and all his diuinitie, or religion, out of *Paracelsus*.

*Carnead.* Let him call vppon *Kelly*, who is better than / them both ; and for the spirites and soules of the ancient Alchumists, he hath them so close emprisoned in the fire purgatorie of his fornace, that for the welth of the King of *Spaines Indies*, it is not possible to release or get the third part of a nit of anie one of them, to help anie but himselfe.

*Import.* Whether you call his fire Purgatorie or no, the fire of Alchumie hath wrought such a purgation or purgatory, in a great number of mens purfes in *England*, that it hath clean fir'd thē out of al they haue.

*Respond.* Therefore, our Doctor (verie well heere towards the latter end of his Oration) comes in with a cooling card.

*Oration.*

*Cordially I could wish, that the pelting horne of these sturres (according to the faciall law) were rebated, wherby our populars might taste of some more plausible*

*Panegericall Orations, fine Theurgie, and profound essentiall God-full arguments.*

*Carnead.* Soft, ere I goe anie further, I care not if I draw out my purse, and change some odde peeces of olde English for new coyne ; but it is no matter, vpon the Retourne from *Guiana*, the valuation of them may alter, and that which is currant now be then copper. Onely this word *God-full* goes with mee, if it be but to court a widdow in Christ, or holy sifter of ours with, that weares *Thy spirit be with vs* for the posie of her ring.

*Oration.*

*But the arte of figges had euer a dappert wit, and a deft conceit : Saint Fame giue him ioy of his blacke cole, & his white chalke.*

*Consil.* / *Saint Fame* is one of the notorious nicke-names he giues thee, as also vnder *the arte of figges* (to cleaue him from the crowne to the waste with a quip) he shadowes *Master Lilly* : but if betweene you you doo not so chalke him vp for a *Crimme & Maniquenbecke*, and draw him in cole more artificially than the face in cole that *Michaell Angelo* and *Raphaell Vrbini* went to buffets about, I would you might be cole carriers or pioners in a cole-pit, whiles colliers ride vpon collimol cuts, or there be any reprifalls of purses twixt this and *Cole-brooke*.

*Respond.* Pacifie your conscience, and leaue your imprecations, wee will beare no coales, neuer feare you. As for him whom (so artlesse and against the haire of anie similitude or coherence) hee calls *the arte of figges*, he shall not need long to call for his figs, for hee will bee choakt soone inough with them ; they hauing lyne ripe by him readie gathered (wanting nothing but pressing) anie time this twelue month. For my owne proper person, if I doo not (in requitall of *S. Fame*) enfaint and canonise him for the famousest Paliard and Senior *Penaquila*, that hath breathed since the raigne of *S. Tor*, let all the droppings of my pen bee seized vpon by the Queenes Takers for Tarre to dresse ships with. I tarry too trifling superfluously in the twittle cum-twattles of his Text : take it, with a wennion, altogether, if you will haue it.

1

*Oration.*

*Embellishtly I can resolue them, here they shall not meete with chalke for cheese ; and though some drinke oyle of prickes for a restorative, they shall haue much adoo to void sirrupe of Roses : for it is not euerie mans blab that casts a sheepes / eye out of a calues head, and for ought I know, I see no reason why the Wheelwright may not be. as honest a man and pregnant mæchanician as the Cutler, the Cutler as the Drawer, the Drawer as the Cutter, and the Writer as the*

*Printer.* And so I recommend euery one and them all, to your curtesies.

*Your mindfull debter,  
Gabriell Haruey.*

[*Carnead.*] Thou haft opprest vs with an Inundation of "*Biscanisme*"; and though we would faine haue made him stand in a white sheet for his baudie oyle of pricks (a common receipt for the greene sicknes); as also examind his firrupe of roses, wherein *Rose*  
Biscanism the most barbarous Spanish; even as the Northren tung of the English. *Flowers* is best experimented, yet time & tide (that staies for no man) forbids vs to tire any more on this carrion, being more than glutted with it alreadie.

*Bentiv.* But yet to giue him this one comfort at the parting, it had not been amisse, that whereas he stands in such feare of casting his sheeps eye out of his calues head, thou neuer meantst it, but if it were an oxes hee should still keepe it, and rather thou wouldst enlarge it than empayre it.

*Respond.* I, make it vp a paire (I sweare) rather than he should bee vnprovidid. *Responde breuiter, Senior Importuno:* haue not I comprehended all the Doctors workes brauely, like *Homers Iliads* in the compasse of a nut-shell? Now where be our honorable Caualliers, that keepe such a prating and a gabrill about our *Gabriell* and his admirable stile, (nothing so good as *Littletons*, with his *Iohn a*

*Nokes*, and *Iohn a Stiles*) let them look to it I wold aduise them, for the course they take in / com-mending this course *Himpenhempen Slampamp*, this stale Apple-squire *Cockledemoy*, who, some 18 yeares since, when these Italionate carnation painted horse tayles were in fashion, in selfe same fort was about (if his chamber fellow had not ouer-rulde him) to haue scutchaneled and painted his pickerdeuant, to make it trauer-like antick : this iadish course, this iauels course, this drumbling course, this dry braind course, if you perseuer and insift in, and on the toppe of asses buskind eares, thus labour to build trophees of theyr praise, canonizing euerie *Bel-shangles*, the water-bearer, for a Saint, and the contemptiblest worlds dish-cloute for a Relique ; inspiredly I prophecie, your endes will be Ale and *Shorditch*, that all preferment and good spirits will abandon you : and more, (to plague you for your *apostata* conceipts) ballets shalbee made of your base deaths, euen as there was of *Cutting Ball*.

*Consil.* Ho Ball, ho ; in the name of God, whether wilt thou ?

*Respond.* To *Saffron-walden* as fast as I can, though I goe a little way about.

*Import.* Vnfortunate *Gabriell*, I am sorry for him, for he hath been a man of good parts.

*Respond.* Good parts? Ile name you one of

feauen times better parts than he, whom you and I and euery one heere, haue knowen from our childhood.

*Import.* Who is that?

*Respond.* In *Speach*, with his eight Parts. But without further *speach*, that you may throghly be resolu'd what those good parts are, you enable the Doctor for, here haue I fet downe his whole life from his infancie to this present 96, euen as they vse in the beginning of a Booke / to fet down the life of anie memorable ancient Author. Dispenſe with it though it drink ſome inck, or prodigally diſpend manie Pages, that might haue been better employd ; for if it yeeld you not ſport for your money, at the ſame price ſhall you buye mee for your bond-flaue, that my Booke coſts you.

*Carnead.* On that condition, wee will make thee a leaſe of our attention for three liues and a halfe, or a hundred lacking one.

*The life and godly education from his childhood of that thrice famous Clarke, and worthie Orator and Poet  
Gabriell Harvey.*

*Gabriell Haruey*, of the age of fortie eight or vpwards, (*Turpe ſenex miles*, tis time for ſuch an olde foole to leaue playing the ſwaſh-buckler) was borne at *Saffron-walden*, none of the obſcureſt

Townes in *Effex*. For his parentage, I will fay, as *Polidore Virgill* faith of Cardinall *Wolfey*, *Parentem habuit virum probum, at lanium*, he had a reasonable honest man to his father, but he was a butcher ; so *Gabriell Haruey* had one Good-man *Haruey* to his father, a true subiect, that paid scot and lot, in the Parish where he dwelt, with the best of them, but yet he was a Rope-maker : *Id quod reminisci nolebat* (as *Polidore* goes forward) *ut rem utique persona illius indignam*, that which is death to *Gabriell* to remember, as a matter euerie way derogatorie to his person, *quare secum totos dies cogitabat, qualis esset, non unde esset* ; wherefore from time to time he doth nothing but turmoile his thoghts how to raise his estate, and inuent new petegrees, and what / great Noble-mans bastard hee was likely to bee, not whose sonne he is reputed to bee.

*Confil.* Giue me leaue before thou readst any further. I would not wish thee so to vpbraid him with his birth, which if he could remedie it were another matter ; but it is his Fortune, and Natures, & neither his fathers fault nor his.

*Respond.* Neither as his fathers nor his fault doo I vrge it, otherwife than it is his fault to beare himselfe too arrogantly aboue his birth, and to contemne and forget the house from whence he came ; which is the reason that hath induced mee (aswell in this Treatise as my former Writings) to

remember him of it, not as anie such hainous discredit simply of it selfe, if his horrible insulting pride were not:

*Nam genus & proavos, & quæ non fecimus ipsi,  
Vix ea nostra voco.*

It is no true glorie of ours what our fore-fathers did, nor are we to answere for anie finnes of theirs. *Demosthenes* was the sonne of a Cutler, *Socrates* of a Midwife; which detracted neyther from the ones eloquence, nor the others wisedome: (farre be it that eyther in eloquence or wisedome I should compare *Gabriell* to either of them.) Marry, for *Demosthenes* or *Socrates* to be ashamed or take it in high derisiõ (which they neuer did) the one to be said to haue a Cutler to his father, or the other that hee had a Mid-wife to his mother (as *Haruey* doth to haue himselfe or anie of his brothers called the sonnes of a Rope-maker, which by his own priuate confession to some of my friends, was the onely thing that most set him a fire against me) I wil iustify it, might argue thẽ or him more inferior & despicable, / than anye Cutler, Mid-wife, or Rope-maker. Turne ouer his two bookes he hath published against me (whereon he hath clapt paper Gods plentie, if that would presse a man to death), and see if in the waye of answer, or otherwise, he once mention the word rope-maker, or come within



fortie foot of it: except in one place of his first booke, where hee nameth it not neither, but goes thus cleanly to worke, (as heretofore I haue set downe) though hee could finde no roome in the expence of 36 sheetes of paper to refute it: *And may not a good sonne haue a reprobate to his father?* (a *Periphrasis* of a Rope-maker, which (if [I] should shryue my selfe) I neuèr heard before. This is once: I haue giuen him cause enough I wot to haue stumbled at it, and take notice of it; for where, in his first booke, hee casts the begger in my dish at euerie third fillable, and so, like an Emperour, triumphs ouer mee, as though he had the Philosophers Stone to play at foot-bal with, & I were a poore Alchumist new set vp, that had scarce money to buy beechen coles for my fornace. In kind guerdon and requitall, I told him in *Piers Pennilesse* Apologie, *That he need not be so lustie, if (like the Peacocke) he lookt downe to the foule feete that vpheld him, for he was but the sonne of a Rope-maker; and he would not haue a shoo to put on his feete, if his father had not traffique with the Hangman.* And in another place, when he brought the Towne Seale or next Iustices hands (as it were) to witnes, that his father was an honest man; which no man denide or impaired anie further, than saying, *He got his liuing backward, & that he had kept three sonnes at the Vniuersitie a long time; I ioynd issue*

with them and confirmed it, & added, *Nay which / is more, three proud sonnes, that when they met the hang-man (their fathers best customer) would not put off their hatts to him ;* with other by-glances, to the like effect : which he silently ouer-looketh, to withdraw men (lapwing-like) from his neast, as much as might bee. Onely hee tells a foolish twittle twattle boasting tale, (amidst his impudent brazen-fac'd defamation of Doctor *Perne*) of the Funerall of his kinsman, *Sir Thomas Smith*, (which word *kinsman*, I wonderd, he could not to be set in great capitall letters), and how in those Obsequies he was a chiefe Mourner. I wis his father was of a more humble spirit ; who, in gratefull lieu and remembrance of the hempen mysterie that hee was beholding too, and the patrons and places that were his trades chiefe maintainers and supporters, provided that the first letter each of his sonnes names began with should allude and correspond with the chiefe marts of his traffick, & of his profession & occupation ; as *Gabriell*, his eldest sonnes name, beginning with a G for Gallowes, *Iohn* with a I for Iayle, *Richard* with an R for Rope-maker ; as much to say, as all his whole liuing depended on the Iayle, the Gallowes, & making of Ropes. Another brother there is, whose name I haue forgot, though I am fure it iumpes with this Alphabet. Iumpe or iarre they with me

as they see cause, this counsaile (if the case were mine) I would giue them, not to bee daunted or blanckt anie whit, had they ten hundred thousand legions of *hangum tuums* or *per collum pendere debes* to their fathers, and any should twit them or gaule with it neuer so: but as *Agathocles* comming from a durt-kneading Potter to be a King, would (in memorie of that his first voca / tion) be serued euer after, as well in earthen dishes as sumptuous royal plate; so, had they but one royall of plate or fixe pennie peece amongst them, they shuld plat (what euer their other cheere were) to haue a salt eele, in resemblance of a ropes end, continuallye seru'd in to their tables; or if they were not able to be at such charges, let them cast but for a twopenny rope of onions euerie day to be brought in, in stead of frute, for a closing vp of their stomackes. It cannot doo amisse, it will remember them they are mortal, & whence they came, & whether they are to goe. Were I a Lord (I make the Lord God a vow) and were but the least a kin to this breath-strangling linage, I would weare a chaine of pearle brayded with a halter, to let the world see I held it in no disgrace, but high glorie to bee discended howsoever: and as amongst the ancient *Aegiptians* (as *Massarius de ponderibus* writes) there was an Instrument called *Funiculus*, conteining 60 furlongs, wherewith they measured their fields and

their vineyards ; so from the plough harnesse to the slender hempen twist that they bind vp their vines with, wold I branch my alliance, and omit nothing in the praise of it, except those two notable blemishes of the trade of rope-makers, *Achitophel* and *Iudas*, that were the first that euer hangd themselves.

*Bentiv* : *Thereto the Rope-makers were but accidentally accessarie, as any honest man may be, that lends a halter to a thiefe, wherewith (vnwitting to him) he goes & steales a horse: wherefore, however, (after a sort) they may be said to haue their hands in the effect, yet they are free and innocent from the cause.*

*Respond* : As though the cause and the effect (more than / the superficies and the substance) can bee seperated, when in manie things, *causa sine qua non* is both the cause and the effect, the common distinction of *potentia non actu*, approuing it selfe verie crazed and impotent herein, since the premisses necessarily beget the conclusion, and so contradictorily the conclusion the premisses; a halter including desperation, and so desperation concluding in a halter; without which fatall conclusion and priuation, it cannot truly bee termed desperation, since nothing is said to bee, till it is borne, and despaire is neuer fully borne till it ceaseth to bee, and hath depriu'd him of beeing,

that first bare it and brought it forth. So that herein it is hard to distinguish which is most to be blamed, of the cause or the effect; the Cause without the effect being of no effect, and the effect without the cause neuer able to haue been. Such another paire of vndiscernable twins and mutuall married correllatiues are Nature & Fortune. As for example; If it be anie mans fortune to hang himselfe and abridg his naturall life, it is likewise natural to him (or allotted him by Nature) to haue no better fortune.

Carnead: *Better or worse fortune, I pray thee let vs heare how thou goest forward with describing the Doctor and his life and fortunes: and you, my fellow Auditors, I beseech you, trouble him not (anie more) with these impertinent Parentheses.*

*Respond:* His education I wil handle next, wherein he ran through *Didimus* or *Diomedes* 6000. books of the Arte of Grammar, besides learnd to write a faire capitall Romane hand, that might well serue for a boone-grace, to such men as ride with their face towards/ the horse taile, or set on the pillorie for coufnage or periurie. Many a copy-holder or magistrall scribe, that holds all his liuing by setting school-boies copies, comes short of the like gift. An old Doctor of *Oxford* shewd me Latine verses of his in that flourishing flantitantiing goutie *Omega* fift, which he presented

vnto him (as a bribe) to get leaue to playe, when hee was in the heighth or prime of his *Puer es cupis atque doceri*. A good qualitie or qualification, I promise you truely, to keepe him out of the danger of the Statute gainst wilfull vagabonds, rogues, and beggers. But in his Grammer yeares, (take me thus farre with you) he was a verie gracelesse litigious youth, and one that would pick quarrells with old *Gulielmus Lillies Sintaxis* and *Profodia*, euerie howre of the daye. A desperate stabber with pen-kniues, and whom he could not ouercome in disputation, he would be sure to break his head with his pen and ink-horne. His father prophecyde by that his ventrus manhood and valure, he would proue an other *S. Thomas a Becket* for the Church. But his mother doubted him much, by reason of certaine strange dreames she had when she was first quicke with childe of him, which wel she hoped were but idle swimming fancies of no consequence : till beeing aduisde by a cunning man (her frend, that was verie farre in her books) one time shee slept in a sheepes skinne all night, to the intent to dreame true, another time vnder a lawrell tree, a third time on the bare ground starke naked, and last on a dead mans tomb, or graue-stone, in the church in a hot Summers after-noone ; when, no barrel better herring, she sped euen as she did before.

For first shee dreamed her wombe was turned to such another hollow / vessel full of disquiet fiends, as *Salomons* brazen Bowle, wherein were so manie thousands of diuels ; which (deepe hidden vnder ground) long after the *Babylonians* (digging for mettals) chaunced to light vpon, and mistaking it for treasure, brake it ope verie greedily, when, as out of *Pandoras* Boxe of maladyes which *Epimetheus* opened, all manner of euills flewe into the world ; so all manner of deuills then broke loose amongst humane kinde. Therein her drowisie diuination not much deceiu'd her ; for neuer wer *Empedocles* deuils so tost from the aire into the sea, & from the sea to the earth, and from the earth to the aire againe exhaled by the Sunne, or driu'n vp by the windes & tempests, as his discontented pouertie (more disquiet than the Irish seas) hath driu'n him from one profession to another. Deuinitie (the Heauen of all Artes) for a while drew his thoughts vnto it, but shortly after the world, the flesh, and the diuell with-drewe him from that, and needes he would be of a more Gentleman-like lustie cut ; whereupon hee fell to morrall Epistling and Poetrie. He fell, I may well say, & made the price of wit and Poetrie fall with him, when hee first began to be a fripler or broker in that trade. Yea, from the aire he fell to the sea, (that my comparifon may hold in euerie point) which is,

he would needs crosse the seas to fetch home two penniworth of Tuscanisme : from the sea to the earth againe he was toft, *videlicet* shortly after hee became a roguish Commenter vppon earth-quakes, as by the famous Epistles (by his owne mouth onely made famous) may more largely appeare. *Vltima linea rerum*, his finall entrancing from the earth to the skies, was his key-colde defence of the Cleargie in the Tractate of *Pap-hatchet*, intermingled, like a small Fleete of gallies, in the huge *Armada* against me. The second dreame his mother had, was that she was deliuerd of a caluer or hand-gun, which in the discharging burst. I pray God (with all my heart) that this caluer, or caualier, of Poetrie, this hand-gun, or elder-gun, that shoots nothing but pellets of chewd paper, in the discharging burst not. A third time in her sleep she apprehended and imagined, that out of her belly there grew a rare garden bed, ouer-run with garish weedes innumerable, which had onely one slip in it of herb of grace, not budding at the toppe neither, but, like the floure *Narcissus*, hauing flowres onely at the roote ; whereby she augur'd and coniectur'd, how euer hee made some shew of grace in his youth, when he came to the top or heighth of his best prooffe, he would bee found a barrain stalk without frute. At the same time (ouer and aboue) shee thought that, in stead of a



boye, (which she desired) she was deliuerd and brought to bed of one of these kistrell birds, called a wind-fucker. Whether it be verifiable, or onely probably furnifed, I am vncertaine, but constantly vp and downe it is bruted, how he pist incke as soone as euer he was borne, and that the first cloute he fowld was a sheete of paper; whence some mad wits giu'n to descant, euen as *Herodotus* held that the *Aethiopians* feed of generation was as blacke as incke, so haply they vnhappely wold conclude, an *Incubus*, in the likenes of an inke-bottle, had carnall copulation with his mother, when hee was begotten. Should I reckon vp but one halfe of the miracles of his conception, that verie substantially haue been affirmed vnto me, one or other, like *Bodine*, wold start / vp and taxe mee for a miracle-monger, as hee taxt *Liuy*, saying that he talkt of nothing else, saue how oxen spake, of the flames of fire that issued out of the *Scipioes* heads, of the Statues of the Gods that swet, how *Iupiter*, in the likenes of a childe or yong-man, appeared to *Hanniball*, and that an Infant of six months olde proclaymed triumph vp and downe the streetes. But let him that hath the poyson of a thousand *Gorgons*, or stinging *Basiliskes*, full crammed in his inke-horne, tamper with mee, or taxe mee in the way of contradiction neuer so little, and he shall finde (if I

finde him not a toad, worthie for nought but to be stampt vnder foote) that I will spit fire for fire, fight diuell fight dragon, as long as he will. No vulgar respects haue I, what *Hoppenny Hoe* & his fellow *Hankin Booby* thinke of mee, so those whom *Arte* hath adopted for the peculiar Plants of her *Academie*, and refined from the dull Northernly droffe of our *Clyme*, hold mee in anie tollerable account.

The woonders of my great Grand-father *Harueys* progeniture, were these.

In the verie moment of his birth, there was a calfe borne in the same Towne with a dubble tongue, and hauing eares farre longer than anie asse, and his feete turned backward, like certaine people of the *Tartars*, that neuertheles are reasonable swift.

In the houre of his birth there was a most darksome Eclipse, as though hel and heauen, about a consultation of an eternall league, had met together.

Those that calculated his natiuitie said, that *Saturne* and the *Moone* (either of which is the caufer of madnesse) were melancholy conioynd together (contrarie to all/course of *Astronomie*) when into the world hee was produced. About his lips, euen as about *Dions* ship, there flocked a swarme of waspes, as soone as euer he was laid

in his cradle. Scarce nine yeres of age he attained too, when, by engrossing al ballets that came to anie Market or Faire there-about, he aspired to bee as desperate a ballet-maker as the best of them. The first frutes of his Poetrie beeing a pittifull Dittie in lamentation of the death of a Fellow, that at Queene *Maries* coronation, came downward, with his head on a rope, from the Spyre of *Powles* steeple, and brake his necke. Afterward he exercised to write certaine graces in ryme dogrell, and verses vppon euerie Month, manie of which are yet extant in Primers and Almanackes. His father, with the extreame ioy of his towardnesse, wept infinitely, and prophecide he was too forward witted to liue long. His Schoole-master neuer heard him peirse or confter, but he cryde out, *O acumen Carneadum! O decus addite diuis!* and swore by *Susenbrotus* and *Taleus*, that he would prooue another *Philo Iudæus* for knowledge and deep iudgment, who in Philosophie was preferd aboue *Plato*; and bee a more rare Exchequer of the Muses, than rich *Gaza* was for wealth; which tooke his name of *Cambyses*, laying all his Treasure there, when hee went to make warre against *Aegipt*.

By this time imagin him rotten ripe for the Vniuersitie, and that hee carries the poake for a messe of porredge in *Christs Colledge*: which I doo

not vpbraid him with, as anie disparagement at all, since it is a thing euerie one that is Scholler of the Housfe is ordinarily subiect vnto by turnes, but onely I thrust it in for a Periphrasis / of his admiffion, or matriculation. I am fure you will bee glad to heare well of him, fince hee is a youth of fome hope, and you haue been partly acquainted with his bringing vp.

In fadnes I would be loath to difcourage ye, but yet in truth (as truth is truth, and will out at one time or other, and fhame the diuell) the coppie of his Tutors letter to his father I will fhew you, about his carriage and demeanour ; and yet I will not pofitiuely affirme it his Tutors Letter neither, and yet you maye gather more than I am willing to vtter, and what you lift not beleeeue referre to after Ages, euen as *Paulus Iouius* did in his lying praifes of the Houfe of *Medices*, or the importunate Dialogue twixt *Charles* the Fifth and him, of *Expedire te oportet, & parare calamos* : or his tempeftuous thunder-bolt Inuectiue againft *Selimus*.

The Letter of *Harueys* Tutor to his Father, as touching his manners and behauior.

Emanuell.

*Sir, Grace and peace vnto you premised. So it is, that your sonne, you haue committed to my charge,*

*is of a passing forward carriage, & profiteth very soundly.*

*Carnead.* That is, beares himselfe very forward on his tip-toes (as he did euer) and profits or *battles* soundly, and is a youth of a good *size*.

*Letter.*

*Great expectations we haue of him, that hee will proue an other Corax or Lacedemonian Ctesiphon for Rhethorique, who was banisht because he vaunted he could talke a whole day of anie thing.*

*Benti.* / I would our *Gurmo Hidruntum*, were like wise banisht with him; for he can hotch-potch whole Decades vp of nothing, and talks idly all his life time.

*Letter.*

*and not much inferiour to Demosthenes, Aeschines, Demades, or the melodious recording Muse of Italy, Cornelius Mufa, Bishop of Bitonto, or the yet liuing mellifluous Pancarola, who is said to cast out spirites by his powerfull diuine eloquence.*

*Carnead.* The spirit of foolery out of this *Archibald Rupenrope* he shall neuer be able to cast, were the *Neszar* of his eloquence a thousand times more superabundant incessant fourding.

*Letter.*

*When I record (as I doo often) the strange vnt Traffiqu't phrases, by him now vented and vnpackt, as of incen-*

darie for fire, an illuminarie for a candle and lanthorne, an indument for a cloake, an vnder foote abiect for a shooe or a boote; then I am readie (with Erasmus) to cry, Sancte Socrates; or (with Aristotle) Ens entium miserere mei! what an ingeny is heere? O his conceipt is most delicate, and that right well he apprehendeth, hauing alreadie proposed high matters for it to worke on. For stealing into his Study by chance the other day, there I found diuers Epistles and Orations, purposely directed and prepared, as if he had been Secretarie to her Maiestie for the Latine tongue; or against such a place should fall, he would be sure not to be vnprovided: as also hee had furnisht himselfe (as if he made no question to be the Vniuersitie Orator) for all Congratulations, Funerall Elegiacall condolments of the death of such and such a Doctor in Cambridge; and which is more, of euerie Priuy Counsailour / in England. You are no Scholler, & therefore little know what belongs to it, but if you heard him how sacredly hee ends euerie sentence with esse posse videatur, you would (like those that arriue in the Phillipinas opprest with sweete odors) forget you are mortall, and imagine your selfe no where but in Paradise. Some there be (I am not ignorant) that vpon his often bringing it in at the end of euerie period, call him by no other name, but esse posse videatur: but they are such as were neuer endenizond in so much arte, as Similiter Definens; and know not

*the true vse of Numerus Rhetoricus. So vpon his first manumission in the mysterie of Logique, because he obseru'd Ergo was the deadly clap of the peece, or driu'n home stab of the Syllogisme, hee accustomed to make it the Faburden to anie thing hee spake; As if anie of his companions complained hee was hungrie, hee would straight conclude Ergo, you must goe to dinner; or if the clocke had stroke or bell towld, Ergo you must goe to such a Lecture; or if anie stranger said he came to seeke such a one, and desir'd him he would shew him which was his chamber, he would forthwith come vpon him with, Ergo he must go vp such a paire of staires: whereupon (for a great while) he was cald nothing but Gabriell Ergo, vp and downe the Colledge. But a scoffe which longer dwelt with him than the rest, though it argued his extreame pregnancie of capacitie, and argute transpersing dexteritie of Paradoxisme; was that once he would needs defend a Rat to be Animal rationale, that is, to haue as reasonable a soule as anie Academick, because she eate and gnawd his bookes, and, except she carried a braine with her, she could neuer digest or be so capable of learning. And the more to confirme it, because euerie one laught at him for a common Mountebanke / Rat-catcher about it; the next rat he seazd on hee made an Anatomie of, and read a lecture of 3. dayes long vpon euerie artire or muschle in her, and after hangd her ouer his head in his studie, in stead of an*

*Apothecaries Crocodile, or dride Alligator. I haue not yet mentiond his Poetrie, wherein hee surmounteth and dismounteth the most heroycallest Countes Mountes of that Craft; hauing writ verses in all kindes, as in forme of a paire of gloues, a dozen of points, a paire of spectacles, a two-hand sword, a poynado, a Colossus, a Pyramide, a Painters eazill, a market crosse, a trumpet, an anchor, a paire of pot-hooke; yet I can see no Authors he hath, more than his owne naturall Genius or Minerua, except it bee Haue with ye to Florida, The storie of Axeres and the worthie Iphijs, As I went to Walsingham, and In Creete when Dedalus, a song that is to him food from heauen, and more transporting and rauishing than Platoes Discourse of the immortalitie of the soule was to Cato, who, with the verie ioy he conceiud from reading thereof, wold needs let out his soule, and so stabd himselfe. Aboue Homers or all mens workes whosoever he doth prize it, laying it vnder his pillow. (like Homers works) euery night, and carrying it in his bosome (next his heart) euerie day. From the generall Discourse of his vertues, let mee digresse, and informe you of some few fragments of his vices; as like a Church and an ale-house, God and the diuell, they manie times dwell neere together. Memorandum: his laundresse complaines of him that hee is mightie fleshly giuen, and that there had lewdnes passed betwixt her daughter and him,*



*if ſhe had not luckely preuented it by ſearching her daughters pocket, wherein ſhe found a little epitomizd Bradfords Meditations, no broader volum'd / than a Seale at Armes, or a blacke melancholy veluet patch, and a three-pennie pamphlet of The Fall of man he had beſtowed on her, that he might ſtow her vnder hatches in his ſtudy, & do what he wold with her. In a waſt white leafe of one of which bookes, he had writ for his ſentence, or poſie, Nox & amor, as much to ſay as O for a pretie wench in the darke; and vnderneath, Non ſunt ſine viribus artus, If thou comſt, old laſſe, I will tickle thee: and in the other, Leue ſit quod bene fertur onus, that is, we muſt beare with one another, and Foelices quibus vſus adeſt, vſe in all things makes perfect. Secondly, he is beyond all reaſon, or Gods forbod, diſtraſtedly enamoured of his own beautie, ſpending a whole forenoone euerie day in ſpunging and licking himſelfe by the glaſſe; and vſeth euerie night after ſupper to walke on the market hill to ſhew himſelfe, holding his gown vp to his middle, that the wenches may ſee what a fine leg and a dainty foote he hath in pumpes and pantoffles, and if they giue him neuer ſo little an amorous regard, he preſently boords them with a ſet ſpeech of the firſt gathering together of ſocieties, and the diſtinction of amor and amicitia out of Tullies Offices; which if it work no effect, & they laugh at, he*

*will rather take a raison of the sunne, and weare it at his eare for a fauor, than it should bee said hee would goe away emptie. Thirdly, he is verie seditious and mutinous in conuersation, picking quarrells with euerie man that will not magnifie and applaud him, libelling most execrably and inhumanely on Iacke of the Falcon, for that he would not lend him a messe of mustard to his red herrings; yea, for a lesser matter than that on the Colledge dog he libeld, onely because he proudly bare vp his taile as hee past by him. And fourthly and lastly, he vseth often to be drunk | with the sirrupe or broth of stewd prunes, and eateth more bread vnder pretence of swearing by it, than would serue a whole Band in the Low Countries. These are the least portion of his veniall sinnes, but I forbear him, & proceed no further, because I loue him: only I wold wish you (being his father) at anie hand to warne him of these matters priuately betwixt him and you, and againe and againe cry out vpon him to beware of pride; which I more than fatally prophecie will be his utter ouerthrow.*

Yours assuredly, and so foorth,

*Iohannes sine nomine; Anno*

*Domini, what ye will.*

Carnead. *What is your censure, you that bee of*

*the common counsaile, may this Epistle passe or no without a demurre or prouiso?*

*Confil. Passe in the way of pastime, and so foorth; it being no indecorum at all, to the Comedie we haue in hand, to admit Piers himselfe for his Tutor, for if he proceed in the seuere discipline he hath begun, he is like to humble him, and bring him to more goodnes than anie Tutor or Master he euer had since he was borne.*

#### LIFE.

Leauing his childhood, which hath leaue or a lawe of priuiledge to be fond; & to come to the first prime of his pamphleting, which was much about the setting vp of the Bull by *Felton* on the bishop of *Londons* gate, or rather some prettie while before, when for an assay or nice tasting of his pen, he capitulated on the births of monsters, horrible murders, and great burnings; and afterward, in the yeare when the earth-quake was, he fell to be a familiar Epistler, & made *Powles Church-yard* / resound, or crie twang againe, with foure notable famous Letters: in one of which hee enterlaced his short but yet sharp iudiciall of Earthquakes, & came verie short and sharpe vppon my lord of *Oxford* in a rattling bundle of English Hexameters. How that thriu'd with him some honest Chronicler helpe me to remember, for it is

not comprehended in my braines Diarie or Ephe-  
merides: but this I can iustifie, that immediately  
vpon it he became a common writer of Alman-  
ackes. Tis meruaile if some of you, amongst  
your vnfatiable ouerturnings of Libraries, haue  
not stumbled on such an approued architect of  
Calenders, as *Gabriel Frend*, the prognosticator.  
That *Frend* I not a little suspect (if a man should  
take occasion to trye his *Frend*) would be found to  
bee no *Frend*, but my constant approued mortall  
emie *Gabriell Haruey*. Well, I may say to you,  
it is a difficult rare thing in these dayes to finde a  
true *Frend*. But the probable reasons which driue  
me to cōiecture that it is a false *Frend* which  
deludes vs with these durtie astronomicall pre-  
dictions, & that *Gabriell Haruey* is this *Frend*  
in a corner, which no man knowes of, be these  
that follow. First, he hath been noted, in manie  
companies where hee hath been, very suspitiously  
to vndermine, whither any man knew such a fellow  
as *Gabriell Frend*, the Prognosticator or no? or  
whether they euer heard of anie that euer saw him  
or knew him? Wheretoo, when they all aunswered  
with one voyce, not guiltie to the seeing, hearing,  
or vnderstanding, of anie such *Starry* Noun Sub-  
stantiue; vp starts me he (like a proud school-  
master, when one of his Boyes hath made an  
Oration before a countrey Maior that hath pleafd)

and bites the lip, and winks / and smiles priuily, and lookes pertly vpon it, as who should say, *coram quem queritis adsum*: and after some little coy bridling of the chin, and nice simpring and wrything his face 30. waies, tels them flatly that vpon his credit and knowledge (both which are hardly worth a candles end to helpe him to bed with) there is no such *Quarter-master*, or master of the 4. Quarters, or Writer in redde letters, as that supposed flower of *Frend-ly* curtesie, *Gabriell Frend*, the Prognosticator ; but, to vse plaine dealing amongst frends, a frend of his it is he must cōceale, who thoght good to shroud himselfe vnder that title. Now if ye will allow of my verdict in this behalfe, I hold *vnusquisque proximus ipse sibi*, euery man is the best *Frend* to himself, & that he himself & no other, is that *Frend* of his he must conceale. The 2. argument that confirmes me in this strong article of my creede, is, for none is priuy to a *blank* maintenance he hath, & some maintenāce of necessity he must haue, or else how can he maintaine his peak in true christendome of rose-water euerie morning? By the ciuil law, peraduenture you will alleage, he fetches it in: nay, therein ye are deceiud, for he hath no law for that. I will not deny but his mother may haue su'd *in forma pauperis*, but he neuer sollicited in form of papers in the Arches in his life. How then, doth he fetch

it aloft with his poetrie? *Dii faciant laudis summa sit ista suæ.* I pray God he neuer haue better lands or liuing till he die. Shall I discharge my conscience, being no more than (on my soule) is most true? The Printers and Stationers vse him as he wer the *Homer* of this age, for they say vnto him, *Si nihil attuleris, ibis, Homere, foras, Haruey* if ye bring no mony in your purse, ye get no books printed here. Euen / for the printing of this logger-head Legend of lyes, which now I am wrapping vp hot spices in, hee ran in debt with *Wolfe*, the Printer, 36. pound, & a blue coate which he borrowed for his man, and yet *Wolfe* did not so much as brush it when hee lent it him, or presse out the print where the badge had been. The Storie at large, a leafe or two hence, you shall heare. The last refuge and sanctuarie for his exhibition (after his lands, law, & poetrie are confiscated) is to presume he hath some priuy benefactors or patrons that holde him vp by the chin. What hee hath had of late, my intelligence failes me, but for a number of yeares past, I dare confidently depose, not a bit nor cue of anie benefactor or patron he had, except the Butler or Manciple of *Trinitie Hall* (which are both one) that trusted him for his commons & sizing ; so that when I haue toyled the vtmost that I can to saue his credite and honestie, the best wit-craft I can turn him too, to get three

pence a weeke, and keepe the paper soales and vpper leather of his pantoffles together, is to write Prognostigations and Almanackes ; and that alone hath beene, and must bee, his best Philosophers Stone till hys last destiny.

I was sure, I was sure, at one time or other I should take him napping. O eternall iest (for Gods sake helpe me to laugh). What a graue Doctor, a base *John Doleta*, the Almanack-maker, Doctor *Deuse-ace* and Doctor *Mery-man*? Why from this day to proceed, Ile neuer goe into *Powles Church-yard* to enquire for anie of his workes, but (where euer I come) looke for them behinde the doore, or on the backe-side of a screene (where Almanackes are set usually); or at a Barbers or Chandlers shop neuer to misse of them. A maker of Almanackes, quoth a, God forgiue me they are readier money than Ale and cakes, and are more familiar read than *Tullies* familiar Epistles, or the Discourse of Debitor & Creditor, especially of those that ordinary write Letters, or haue often occasion to paye money. They are the verie Dialls of dayes, the Sunnes ghesse; and the Moones months-mind. Here in *London* streets, if a man haue busines to enquire for anie bodie, and he is not well acquainted with the place, he goes filthely halpering, and asking, cap in hand, from one shop to another, where's such a house and such a signe?

But if we haue busines to speake with anie in the skie, buy but one of *Gabriell Frend* or *Gabriell Harueys* Almanacks, and you shall carry the signe & house in your pockets, whether *Iupiters* house, *Saturnes* house, *Mars* hys house, *Venus* house, or anie hot-house or baudyhouse of them all. To conclude, not the poorest walking-mate, or thredbare cut-purse in a countrey, that can well be without them, be it but to know the Faires & Markets when they fall : & against who dare I will vphold it, that theres no such necessarie Book of *common* places in the earth as it, as for example, From *London* to *Yorke*, from *Yorke* to *Barwicke*, and so backwardes. It is a strange thing I should be so skilfull in Phisiognomie and neuer studied it. I alwaies saw in the Doctors countenance he greedily hunted after the high way to honour, and was a busie Chronicler of high wayes, he had such a number of vgly wrinckled high wayes in his visage. But the time was, when he would not haue giuen his head for the washing, and would haue tooke foule sorne that the best of them all should haue out-fac'd / him. I haue a tale at my tungs end, if I can happen vpon it, of his hobby-horse-reuelling & dominering at *Audley-end*, when the Queene was there : to which place, *Gabriell* (to doo his countrey more worship & glory) came ruffling it out, huffty tuffty, in his suite of veluet.



There be thē in *Cambridge* that had occasion to take note of it, for he stood noted or scoard for it in their bookes manie a faire day after: and if I take not my markes amisse, *Rauen*, the botcher by *Pembrook-hal*, (whether he be aliue or dead I know not) was as priue to it euerie *patch* of it from top to toe, as hee that made it; and if euerie one would but mend one as often as hee hath mended that, the world would bee by 200 parts honefter than it is; yet be he of the mending hand neuer so, and *Gabriell* neuer able to make him amends, he may blesse the memorie of that ward-rope, for it will be a good while ere hee meete with the like customer as it was to him, at least 14. yere together, falling into his hands twice a yere, as sure as a club, before euerie Batchelors and Masters Commensment, or if it were aboue, it was a generall *Item* to all the Vniuersitie, that the Doctor had some ierking Hexameters or other shortly after to passe the stampe, hee neuer in all his life (till lately he fel a wrangling with his sifter in law) hauing any other busines at *London*. The rotten mould of that worme eaten relique (if hee were well searcht) he weares yet, meaning when he dies to hang it ouer his tombe for a monument: and in the meane time, though it is not his lucke to meete with euer a substantiall baudie case (or booke case) that carries *rem in re*, meate in the

mouth in it (A miserable, intollerable case, when a yong fellow & a yong wench cannot put / the case together, and doo with their owne what they list, but they shalbe put to their booke to confesse, and be hideously perplext) yet I say daily and hourelly doth he deale vpon the case notwithstanding. You wil imagine it a fable percase which I shall tell you, but it is x times more vnfallible thã the newes of the Iewes rising vp in armes to take in the Land of promise, or the raining of corne this Summer at *Wakefield*. A Gentleman (long agoe) lent him an old veluet saddles, which when he had no vse for, since no man else would trust him for a bridle, and that he was more accustomed to be ridden than to ride, what does me he, but deeming it a verie base thing for one of his standing in the Vniuersity to be said to be yet dunsing in *Sadolet*, & with all, scorning his chamber shuld be employd as an ostry presse to lay vp iades riding iackets and trusses in, presently vntruffeth & pelts the out-side from the lining, and vnder *benedicite* here in priuate be it spoken, dealt verie cunningly and couertly in the case, for with it he made him a case or couer, for a dublet, which hath casd and couered his nakednes euer since, and to tell yee no lye, about two yeare and a halfe past, hee credited *Newgate* with the same metamorphized costly vestiment. As good cheape as it was deliuerd to mee

(at the second hand) you haue it. *Nil habeo præter auditum*, I was not at the cutting it out, nor will I binde your consciences too strictly to embrace it for a truth, but if my iudgement might stand for vp, it is rather likely to be true than false, since it vanisht inuisible and was neuer heard of: and besides, I cannot deuise how he should behaue him to consume such an implement, if he cōfiscated it not to that vse, neither lending it away nor /selling it; nor how hee should other wise thrust himselfe into such a moth-eaten weed, hauing neyther money nor frends to procure it. Away, away, neuer hauke nor pause vpon it, for without all par-anters it is so; and let them tattle and prate till their tongues ake, were there a thousand more of them, and they should set their wit to his, he would make them set besides the saddle, euen as he did the Gentleman. A man in hys case hath no other *shift*, or appaile, which you will, but he must thus shift otherwhile for his liuing, especially liuing quiet as he dooth without anie Croffes (in his purse *subaudi*) and being free from all couetous incumbrances: yet in my shallow foolish conceipt, it were a great deale better for him if he were not free, but *croft* soundly, & cōmitted prisoner to the Tower, where, perhaps once in his life, he might be brought to look vpon the Queenes coine in the Mynt, & not thus be

alwaies abroad, and neuer *within*, like a begger. I must beg patience of you, thogh I haue been fomewhat too tedious in brushing his veluet, but the Court is not yet remou'd from *Audley-end*, and we shall come time enough thether to learne what rule he keepes.

There did this our *Talatamtana*, or Doctour *Hum*, thrust himselfe into the thickest rankes of the Noblemen and Gallants, and whatsoeuer they were arguing of, he would not misse to catch hold of, or strike in at the one end, and take the theame out of their mouths, or it should goe hard. In selfe same order was hee at his pretie toyes and amorous glaunces and purposes with the Damsells, & putting baudy riddles vnto them. In fine, some Disputations there were, and he made an Oration before the Maids of Honour, and not before her / Maiestie, as heretofore I misinformedly set down, beginning thus :

*Nux mulier asinus simili sunt lege ligata,  
Hæc tria nill rectè faciunt, si verbera desunt.*

*A nut, a woman, and an asse are like,  
These three doo nothing right, except you strike.*

Carnead. *He would haue had the Maids of Honor thriftely cudgeld belike, and lambeakt one after another.*

Respond. *They vnderstood it not so.*

Bentiv. *No, I thinke so, for they vnderstood it not at all.*

Confil. *Or if they had, they would haue driu'n him to his guard.*

Carnead. *Or had the Guard driu'n him downe the staires, with Deiu vous garde Monsieur, goe and prate in the yard Don Pedant, there is no place for you here.*

#### LIFE.

The proces of that Oration was of the same woofe and thrid with the beginning: demurely and maidenly scoffing, and blushingly wantoning, & making loue to those soft skind soules & sweete Nymphes of *Helicon*, betwixt a kinde of carelesse rude ruffianisme, and curious finicall complement: both which hee more exprest by his countenance, than anie good iests that hee vttered. This finished (though not for the finishing or pronouncing of this) by some better frends than hee was worthie of, and that afterwards found him vnworthie of the graces they had bestowed vpon him, he was brought to kisse the Queenes hand, and it pleased her Highnes to say (as in my former Booke I haue cyted), that he lookt something like an Italian. No other incitement he needed to rouse his plumes, pricke up his eares, / and run

away with the bridle betwixt his teeth, and take it vpon him (of his owne originall ingrafted disposition theretoo he wanting no aptnes) but now he was an insulting Monarch, aboue *Monarcha* the Italian, that ware crownes on his shooes : and quite renounst his naturall English accents and gestures, & wrested himselfe wholly to the Italian *puntilios*, speaking our homely Iland tongue strangely, as if he were but a raw practitioner in it, and but ten daies before had entertained a schoole-master to teache him to pronounce it. Ceremonies of reuerence to the greatest States (as it were not the fashion of his cuntry) he was very parsimonious and niggardly of, and would make no bones to take the wall of *Sir Philip Sidney*, and another honourable Knight (his companion), about Court yet attending ; to whom I wish no better fortune, than the forelockes of Fortune he had hold of in his youth, & no higher fame than hee hath purchast himselfe by his pen : being the first (in our language) I haue encountred, that repurified Poetrie from Arts pedantisme, & that instructed it to speake courtly. Our Patron, our *Phæbus*, our first *Orpheus* or quintessence of inuention he is : wherefore, either let vs iointly inuent some worthy subiect to eternize him ; or let Warre call back Barbarisme from the *Danes*, *Pittes*, and *Saxons*, to suppress our frolicke spirits, and the least sparke of

more eleuated fence amongst us finally be quenched and die, ere we can set vp brazen Pillers for our Names and Sciences, to preferue them from the Deluge of Ignorance. But to returne from whence I haue strayd, *Dagobert Coppenhagen* in his iollitie persisteth; is Haile fellow well met with those that looke higheft: and to cut it off in three / syl- lables, follows the traine of the delicatest fauorites and minions, which by chaunce being withdrawne a mile or two off, to one Master *Bradburies*, where the late deceased countesse of *Darbie* was then harbingered, after supper they fell to danfing, euery one choosing his mate as the custome is: in a trice so they shuffled the cards of purpose (as it wer to plague him for his presumption) that will he nill, he must tread the measures about with the foulest vgly gentlewoman or fury that might be, (then wayting on the foresaid Countesse) thrice more deformed than the woman with the horne in her head. A turne or two hee mincingly pac't with her about the roome, & solemnly kist her at the parting: Since which kisse of that squinteyd *Lamia* or *Gorgon*, as if she had been another *Circe* to transforme him, he hath not one houre beene his owne man. For whilst yet his lips smoakt with the steame of her scortching breath, that parcht his beard like sunburnt grasse in the Dog-daies, he ran headlong violently to his study as if he had bin

borne with a whirl-winde, and strait knockt me up together a Poem, calde his *Aedes Valdinenfes*, in prayse of my L. of *Leycester*, of his kissing the Queenes hand, and of her speech & comparifon of him, how he lookt like an Italian : what *vide*, sayth he in one place ; Did I fee her Maiefty, quoth a, *Imo, vide ipse loquentem cum Snaggo*, I faw her conferring with no worfe man then Mafter *Snagge*. The bunglerlietf yearfes they were that euer were fcande, beeing moft of them hought, and cut off by the knees, out of *Virgill* and other Authors. This is a patterne of one of them : *Wodde, meusque tuusque suusque Britannorumque suorumque*, running through all the Pronounes / in it, and iumpe imitating a verfe in *As in presenti*, or in the demeanes or adiacents I am certaine. I had forgot to obferue vnto you, out of his firft foure familiar Epiftles, his ambitious stratagem to aspire, that whereas two great Pieres beeing at iarre, and their quarrell continued to bloudfhed, he would needs, vncald and when it lay not in his way, fteppe in on the one fide, which indeede was the fafer fide (as the foole is crafty inough to fleepe in a whole fkin) and hewe and flafh with his Hexameters, but hewd and flafht he had beene as fmall as chippings, if he had not played ducke Fryer, and hid himfelfe eight weeks in that Noblemans houfe, for whome with his pen hee thus bladed. Yet neuertheleffe Syr



*Iames a Croft*, the olde Controwler, ferrited him out, and had him vnder hold in the Fleete a great while, taking that to be aimde and leveld against him, because he cald him his olde Controwler, which he had most venomously belched against Doctour *Perne*. Vppon his humble submission, and ample exposition of the ambiguous Text, and that [at] his forementioned *Mecenas* mediation, matters were dispenst with and quallified, & some light countenance, like sunshine after a storme, it pleased him after this to let fall vppon him, and so dispatcht him to spurre Cut backe againe to Cambridge. Where, after his arriual, to his associates and companions he priuatly vaunted what redoubled rich brightnes to his name this short eclipse had brought, and that it had more dignified and raised him, than all his endeouours from his childhood. With such incredible applause and amazement of his Iudges hee bragd hee had cleard himselfe, that euery one that was there ran to him and embrast him, and shortly hee was /promist to be cald to high prefermēt in court, not an ace lower than a Secretariship, or one of the Clarks of the Councell. Should I explaine to you howe this wrought with him, and howe in the itching heate of this hopefull golden worlde and hony moone, the ground would no longer beare him, but to Sturbridge Fayre, and vp and downe *Cambridge*, on his foot-cloth maieستي-

cally he would pace it, with manie moe madde trickes of youth nere plaid before ; in stead of making his heart ake with vexing, I should make yours burst with laughing. Doctor *Perne* in this plight, nor at anie other time, euer met him, but he would shake his hand and crie *Vanitas vanitatum, omnia vanitas*, Vanitie of vanities, and all things is vanitie.

His father he vndid to furnish him to the Court once more, where presenting himselfe in all the colours of the raine-bow, and a paire of mouftachies like a black horfe tayle tyde up in a knot, with two tuffts sticking out on each side, he was askt by no meane personage, *Unde hæc insania?* whence proceedeth this folly or madnes? & he replied with that wether-beaten piece of a verse out of the Grammer, *Semel insaniuimus omnes*, once in our dayes there is none of vs but have plaid the ideots; and so was he counted and bad stand by for a *Nodg'scombe*. He that most patronizd him, prying more searhingly into him, and finding that he was more meete to make sport with, than anie way deeply to be employd, with faire words shooke him of, & told him he was fitter for the Vniuersitie, thã for the Court or his turne, and so bad God prosper his studies, and sent for another Secretarie to *Oxford*.

Readers, be merry ; for in me there shall want

nothing / I can doo to make you merry. You see I haue brought the Doctor out of request at Court, & it shall cost me a fall, but I will get him howted out of the Vniuersitie too, ere I giue him ouer. What will you giue mee when I bring him vppon the Stage in one of the principallest Colledges in *Cambridge*? Lay anie wager with me, and I will ; or if you laye no wager at all, Ile fetch him aloft in *Pedantius*, that exquisite Comedie in *Trinitie Colledge* ; where vnder the cheife part, from which it tooke his name, as namely the concise and firking finicaldo fine School-master, hee was full drawn & delineated from the soale of the foote to the crowne of his head. The iust manner of his phraze in his Orations and Disputations they stufft his mouth with, & no Buffianisme throughout his whole bookes, but they bolsterd out his part with ; as those ragged remnaunts in his foure familiar Epistles twixt him and *Senior Immerito, raptim scripta, Nosti manum & stylum*, with innumerable other of his rabble-routs : and scoffing his *Musarum Lachrymæ* with *Flebo amorem meum, etiam Musarum lachrymis* ; which, to giue it his due, was a more collachrymate wretched Treatise than my *Piers Penniless*, being the pittifullest pangs that euer anie mans Muse breathd foorth. I leaue out halfe ; not the carrying vp of his gowne, his nice gate on his pantoffles, or the affected

accent of his speech, but they personated. And if I should reueale all, I thinke they borrowd his gowne to playe the Part in, the more to flout him. Let him denie this (and not damne himselfe) for his life if hee can. Let him denie that there was a Shewe made at *Clare-hall* of him and his two Brothers, called,

*Tarra / rantantara turba tumultuosa Trigonum,  
Tri-Harueyorum, Tri-harmonia.*

Let him denie that there was another Shewe made of the little Minnow his Brother, *Dodrans Dicke*, at *Peter-house*, called,

*Duns furens.* Dick Haruey in a frensie.

Whereupon *Dick* came and broke the Colledge glasse windowes ; and Doctor *Perne* (being then either for himselfe or deputie Vice-chancellour) caused him to be fetcht in, and fet in the Stockes till the Shew was ended, and a great part of the night after.

The first motiue, or caller foorth, of *Gabriels* English Hexameters, was his falling in loue with *Kate Cotton*, and *Widdowes* his wife, the Butler of *Saint Iohns*. And this was a rule inuiolate amongst the fraternitie of them, *Gabriell* was alwayes in loue, *Dick* still in hate, either with *Aristotle*, or with the great Beare in the firmament which he continually bayted ; or with Religion, against which

in the publike Schooles he fet vp Atheistical Questions, and besides compared his beard so *Porphirian* blasphemously; as I am afraid the Earth would swallow me, if I should but rehearse. It fell to my lot to haue the perusing of a letter of his to Doctor *Fulke*, then lying at a Preachers house neere Criplegate, in *London*, as touching his whole persecution by the Fellowes of the House about it, & how, except he had mercie on him, he were expulst and cast away without redemption.

The third Brother (*John*), had almost as ill a name as the Spittle in *Shorditch*, for the olde reakes hee kept with the wenches in *Queenes Colledge Lane*; and if *M. Wathe* his ancient ouer-wharter (betwixt whom & him there was such deadly emulation) had bin furnisht with those instructions thereof which I could haue lent him, he had put him downe more handsmoothe than he did, though at a Commensment dinner in *Queenes Colledge* (as apparantly as might be) he grauelde, and set a ground both him and his brother *Gabienus*. This *John* was hee, that beeing enter-taind in Iustice *Meades* House (as a Schoole-master) stole away his daughter, and to pacifie him, dedicated to him an Almanacke; which daughter (or *Iohns* wife) since his death, *Gabriell* (vnder pretence of taking out an Administration,

according as she in euery court exclaimes) hath gone about to circumuent of al she hath: to the which effect (about 3 yere agoe) there were three Declarations put vp against him, & a little while after I heard there were Attachments out for him: whether he hath compounded since or no, I leaue to the Iurie to enquire.

*Pigmeý Dicke* aforefaid, that lookes like a pound of gold-smiths candles, is such another Venerian steale placard as *Iohn* was, being like to commit folly the last yeare in the House where he kept (as a friend of his verie soberly informed me) with a Milke-maid; & if there had not bin more gouernment in her than in him (for all his diuinitiship) the thing you wote of, the blowe that neuer smarteth had been strooke, and she carried away to *Saffron-walden*, he sending for her to one *Philips* his house, at the signe of the Bell in *Bromley*, & there feasting her to that end. Fast and pray, luxurious Vicar, to keepe vnder thy vnruely members, and wrap thee in a Monkes Cowle, which (they say) is good to mortifie; or / drinke of the water of *Saint Iues*, by *Iohn Bale* (out of Romish Authors) produced to be good against the temptations of the petticoate; or (which exceedeth them both) trie *Master Candishes* Roote hee brought out of the Indies, giu'n him by a venerable Hermit, with this *probatum est*,

or vertue, that he which tasted it should neuer lust after ; by that token he could meet with none about Court, or in *London*, that was content to be an Eunuch for the Kingdome of Heauen, or lou'd his pleasure so little, as to venture vpon it. I haue not yet seald and shakt hands with him for making two such false Prophets of *Saturne* & *Iupiter*, out of whose iumbling in the darke, and coniunction copulatiue, he denounced such Oracles and alterations to ensue, as if (like another *Thebit Bencorat*) he had liu'd 40. yere in a mountain to discerne the motion of the eighth Orbe : but as he (for all his labour) could not attaine to it, no more could *Dick* (with his predictions) compasse anie thing but derision, being publicly preacht against for it at *Powles Crosse* by the Bishop of *London* that then was, who (according to Arte, if such a Coniunction had chanc'd) disproou'd the reuolutions to bee cleane contrarie ; and besides, a singular *Scholler*, one *Master Heath*, (a Follower of the right Honorable and worthie *Lord of Hunsdon* that now is) set vpon it, and answered it in Print, pell mell, *cape a pee*, by probable reason, and out of all Authors perspicuously demonstrating what a lying *Ribaden*, and *Chinklen Kraga* it was, to constellate and plannet it so portentously. I am none of the *Cashiers*, or *Prouiditores*, for lame fouldiours or Men of desert,

but were I one, as the *Athenians* (in the noblest Schoole of their Academy) erected to *Berosus*, the Astro / loger, a Statue with a golden tongue, for his predictions were true: so wold I largely disburse toward the building him a Statue on *Sophisters Hills*, by *Cambridge*, with a tongue of copper or ockamie (neerely counterfetting siluer) such as organe pipes & serieants maces are made of, because his predictions are false & erronious. And so lightly are all the trade of them, neuer foretokening or foretelling anie thing, till after it be come to passe: and then, if 't be a Warrior, or Conqueror, they would flatter, who is luckie and succesfull in his enterprises, they say he is borne vnder the auspicious Signe of *Capricorne*, as *Cardan* faith *Cosmo de Medices*, *Selimus*, *Charles* the fifth, and *Charles* Duke of *Burbon* were; albeit, I dare be sworne, no wizardly Astronomer of them all euer dreamd of anie such Calculations, till they had shewd themselues so victorious, and their prosperous raignes were quite expired. On the other side, if he be disastrous or retrograde in hys courses, the maleuolent starres of *Medusa* and *Andromeda*, inferring suddaine death or banishment, predominated his natiuitie. But (I thank heauen) I am none of their credulous disciples, nor can they coufen or seduce me with anie of their iugling coniecturalls, or winking, or tooting through a fix



penny *Iacobs Staffe* ; their spels, their characters, their anagrams, I haue no more perswasion of, than I am perswaded, that vnder the inuerfed denomination or anagram of this Word *September*, (as some of our late Deuines and auncient Hebrue Rabbines would enforce vpon vs) is included the certaine time of the Worlds first Creation ; or that he which is born vnder *Aries* shall neuer goe in a thrid bare cloake, or be troubled with the rheume, because the / Sunne, arriuing in that Poynt, cloatheth the Earth with a new fleece, and sucks vp all the Winters superfluous moyfture ; or that he which is borne vnder *Libra* shall bee a Iudge or Iustice of Peace, because the Sunne in that Signe equally poyzeth the daies & nights alike. *Heilding Dicke* (this our Ages *Albumazar*) is a temporist that hath faith inough for all Religions, euen as *Thomas Deloney*, the balletting Silke-weauer, hath rime inough for all myracles, & wit to make a *Garland of goodwill* more than the premisses, with an Epistle of *Momus* and *Zoylus* ; whereas his Muse, from the first peeping forth, hath stood at Liury at an Ale-house wispe, neuer exceeding a penny a quart, day nor night ; and this deare yeare, together with the silencing of his loombes, scarce that ; he being strained to betake him to carded Ale : whence it proceedeth that since *Candlemas* or his ligge of *Iohn for the King*, not one merrie

Dittie will come from him, but *The Thunder-bolt against Swearers, Repent England, repent, & The strange iudgments of God*. No more will there from *Dick quibus in terris, Dick*, pastor of *Chefelhurst*, that was wont to pen Gods iudgements vpon such and such and one, as thicke as Watermen at *Westminster-bridge*. The miracles of the burning of *Brustur* with his Wench in adulterie, he writ for *Binneman*; which a villaine (*Brusturs* owne kinsman) long afterward at the Gallowes tooke vpon him, and shewed what Ninnies a vayne Pamphleter (one *Richard Haruey*) had made of the world, imputing it to such a wonderfull vengeance of adulterie, when it was nought but his murderous knauerie. Dead sure they are in writing against the dead; dauncing Moriscoes and Lualtoes on the silent graues of / *Plato, Buchanan, Sinesius, Pierius, Aristotle, & the whole Petigree of the Peripatecians, Sophisters, & Sorbonists*; the most of whose mouthes, clods had bungd vp many *Olimpiades* since, yet seeke they to stifle and choak them again with waste paper: when (in thys innouating selfe-love Age) it is disputable, whether they haue anie frends or no left to defend them. This is that *Dick*, that fet *Aristotle*, with his heeles vpward, on the Schoole gates at *Cambridge*, and asses eares on hys head; a thing, that in *perpetuam rei memoriam*, I will record and neuer haue done with. This is

that *Dick*, that comming to take one *Smiths* (a yong Batchelour of *Trinitie Colledge*) Questions, and they being such as he durst not venture on, cride, *Aquila non capit muscas*, an eagle catcheth no flies ; and so gaue them him againe : wheretoo, the other (beeing a lustie big boand fellow, & a *Golias*, or *Behemoth*, in comparison of him) strait retorted it vpon him, *Nec elephas mures*, no more doth an elephant stoope to myce ; and so they parted. This is that *Dick*, of whom *Kit Marloe* was wont to say, that he was an affe, good for nothing but to preach of the Iron Age : dialoguizing *Dicke*, *Io Paean Dicke*, *Synesian* and *Pierian Dick*, *Dick* the true *Brute*, or noble *Trojan*, or *Dick* that hath vowd to liue and die in defence of *Brute*, and this our Iles first offspring from the *Troians*, *Dick* against baldnes, *Dick* against *Buchanan*, little and little witted *Dicke*, *Aquinas Dicke*, "*Lipsian*" *Dick*, heigh light a loue a *Dick*, that lost his Benefice & his Wench both at once ; his Benefice for want of sufficiencie, and his wench for want of a Benefice or suf / ficient liuing to maintaine her, *Dilemma Dick*, dissentious *Dick* ; with *abi in malam crucem*, that is, get all thy frends in their prayers to commend thee, I shut vp the congested *Index* of thy redundant opprobry, and hast backe to the right

Therefore Lipsian Dicke, because lamely and lubberly hee strives to imitate and bee another English Lipsius, when his lippes hang so in his light, as hee can neuer come neere him.

worshipfull of the Lawes, *Master D. Garropius*, thy brother, (as in euerie Letter that thou writ'st to him thou tearmst him,) who, for all he is a ciuill Lawier, will neuer be *Lex loquens*, a Lawier that shall lowd throate it with, Good, my Lord, confider this poor mans case. But thogh he be in none of your Courts Licentiate, and a Courtier otherwise, hee is neuer like to be; one of the Emperour *Iustinians* Courtiers (the ciuill Lawes chiefe Founder) *malgre* he will name himselfe: and a quarter of a yeare since, I was aduertised, that aswell his workes, as the whole body of that Law compleat, (hauing no other employment in his Facultie) hee was in hand to tourne into English Hexameters; and if he might haue had his will, whiles he was yet resident in *Cambridge*, it should haue been seuerely enacted throughtout the Vniuersitie, that none should speake or ordinarily conuerse, but in that cue. For himselfe, hee verie religiously obseru'd it, neuer meeting anie Doctor or friend of his, but he would salute him, or giue him the time of the day in it most heroically, euen as hee saluted a Phisition of speciall account in these tearmes.

*Nere can I meet you, sir, but needs must I veile  
my bonnetto.*

Which he (loth to be behinde with him in curtesie) thus turnd vpon him againe,

*Nere can I meet you, fir, but needs must I call ye  
knauetto.*

Once hee had made an Hexameter verse of seauen feete, whereas it would lawfully beare but fixe ; which fault / a pleasant Gentleman hauing found him with, wrapt the said verse in a peece of paper, & sent a lowse with it, inserting vnderneath, *This verse hath more feet than a lowse.* But to so Dictionarie a custome it was grown with him, that after supper if he chaunst to play at Cards, and had but one Queen of Harts light in his hand, he would *extempore*, in that kinde of verse, runne vppon mens hearts and womens hearts all the night long, as,

*Stout heart and sweet hart, yet stoutest hart to bee  
stooped.*

No may-pole in the streete, no wether-cocke on anie Church steeple, no garden, no arbour, no lawrell, no ewe tree, that he would ouerslip without hayling after the same methode. His braynes, his time, all hys maintenance & exhibition vpon it he hath consumed, and neuer intermitted, till such time as he beganne to Epistle it against mee, since which I haue kept him a work indifferently : and that in the deadeft season that might bee ; hee lying in the ragingest furie of the last Plague, when there dyde aboute 1600. a week in *London*,

inck-squittring and printing againſt me at *Wolfes* in *Powles Church-yard*. Three quarters of a yere thus cloyſtred and immured hee remained, not beeing able almoſt to ſtep out of dores, he was ſo barricadoed vp with graues, which beſiedged and vndermined his verie threshold ; nor to open his window euening or morning, but a dampe (like the ſmoake of a Cannon) from the fat manured earth with contagion (being the buriall place of ſiue pariſhes) in thick rouling clowds would ſtrugingly funnell vp, & with a full blaſt puffe in at his caſements. Supply mee with a margent note, ſome bodie that hath more idle leaſure than I haue at the / poſt haſt hudling vp of theſe preſents, as touching his ſpirites yearning empafionment, and agonizd fiery thirſt of reuenge, that neglected ſoule & bodies helth, to compaſſe it: the helth of his bodie, in lying in the hell mouth of infection, & his ſoules health in minding any other matters than his ſoul ; nay, matters that were vtter enemies to his ſoul (as his firſt offering of wrong, & then proſecuting of it), when his ſoule and bodie both, euerie hower wer at the hazard poynt to be ſeperated. The argument (to my great reioycing & ſolace) frō hence I haue gathered, was, that my lines were of more ſmarting efficacie than I thought, & had that ſteele and mettall in them, which pierſt & ſtung him to

the quick, and droue him, vpon the first searching of the wounds I had giu'n him, to such rauing impatience, as he could rest no where, but through the poysonfullest iawes of death, and fire and water, he would burst, to take vengeance, and not onely on the liuing but the dead also, (as what will not a dogge doo that is angerd, bite and gnarle at anie bone or stone that is neere him): but rather I deeme that from the harsh grating in his eares, & continuall crashing of sextens spades against dead mens bones (more dismall musique to him than the Voyce or Ghosts Hearse), he came so to be incenst & to inueigh against the dead, therewith they exasperating, and setting his teeth on edge, more than hee would. But let that rest, which would not let him rest: at *Wolfes* he is billeted, sweating, and dealing vpon it most intentiuely; and for he would (as nere as was possible) remoue all whatsoeuer encumbrâces, that might alienate, or withdraw him from his studie, hee hath vowd (during his abode there) not to haue a denier in his purse, or see money, / but let it run on the score, and goe to the diuell if it will, he is resolute, and means to trouble himselfe with none of this trash: and yet it is a world to heare how malicious tongues will flaunder a man with truth, and giue out, how of one *Mighell*, (sometimes *Dexters* man in *Powles*

*Churchyard*, though now he dwells at *Exceter*) he should borrow ten shillings to buy him shooes and stockings, and when it came to repayment, or that he was faine to borrow of another to fatisfie and pay him (as he will borrow so much fauor of him he nere saw before) no lesse than halfe a crowne out of that ten shillings he forswore, & rebated him for vsurie. Contēt your self, it was a hard time with him, let not *Mighel* and *Gabriell* (two Angels) fall out for a trifle : those that be his frends will consider of it & beare with him, euen as *Beniamin*, the Founders father who dwels by *Fleete-bridge*, hath borne with him this foure yere for a groat which he owes him for plaisters ; and so *Trinitie Hall* hath borne with him more than that, he being (as one that was Fellow of the same House of his standing informd mee) neuer able to pay his Commons, but from time to time borne out in almes amongst the rest of the Fellowes ; how euer he tells some of his frends he hath an out-brothership, or beadsmans stipend, of ten shillings a yeare there still comming to him, and a Library worth 200. pound. *Iohn Wolfe* sayes nothing, and yet hee beares with him asmuch as the best, and if hee had borne a little longer, he would haue borne till his back broke, though *Gabriell* lookes big vpon it, and protests by no



bugges, he owes him not a dandiprat, but that *Wolfe* is rather in his debt than hee in his, all reckonings iustly cast. In plaine truth and in verity, some pleasures / he did *Wolfe* in my knowledge. For first and formost he did for him that eloquent *post-script* for the Plague Bills, where he talkes of the series, the classes & the premisses, & presenting them with an exacter methode hereafter, if it please God the Plague continue. By the style I tooke it napping, and smelt it to be a pig of his *Sus Mineruam*, the Sow his Muse, as soone as euer I read it, and since the Printer hath confest it to mee. The vermilion *Wrinkle de crinkledum* hop'd (belike) that the Plague would proceed, that he might haue an occupation of it. The second thing wherein he made *Wolfe* so much beholding to him, was that if there were euer a paltrie *Scriuano*, betwixt a Lawiers Clark & a Poet, or smattring pert Boy whose buttocks were not yet coole since he came from the grammar, or one that houers betwixt two crutches of a Scholler and a Traueller, when neither will helpe him to goe vpright in the worlds opinion, & shuld stumble in there with a Pamphlet to sell, let him or anie of them but haue conioynd with him in rayling against mee, and feed his humor of vaine-glorie, were their stufte by ten millions more *Tramontani* or *Transalpine* barbarous

than balletry, he would haue preft it vpon *Wolfe*, whether he would or no, and giu'n it immortall allowance aboue *Spencer*. So did he by that Philiftine Poem of *Parthenophill and Parthenope*, which to compare worfe than it felfe, it would plunge all the wits of *France*, *Spaine*, or *Italy*. And when hee faw it would not fell, hee cald all the World affes a hundred times ouer, with the ftampingeft curfing and tearing he could vtter it, for that he hauing giu'n it his paffe or good word, they obftinately contemnd and mislik'd it. So did he by *Chutes Shores Wife*, / and his *Procris and Cephalus*, and a number of *Pamphlagonian* things more, that it would ruft & yron fpot paper to haue but one fillable of their names breathed ouer it. By thefe complots and carefull purueyance for him, *Wolfe* could not choofe but bee a huge gainer, a hundred marke at leaft, ouer the fhoulder : & which was a third aduantage to hoyft or raife him, befides the Doctors meate and drinke, which God payd for, and it is not to be fpoken of, he fet him on the fcore for fack *centum pro cento*, a hundred “quarts in a feuen-  
 night,” whiles he was thus faracently  
 You must  
 consider it  
 was the dog  
 daies, and he  
 did it to coole  
 him.  
 fentencing it againft mee. Towards  
 the latter end, he grew weary of  
 keeping him and fo manie affes (of  
 his procuring) at liuery, and would grumble and

mutiny in his hearing of want of money. Tut man, mony would he say, is that your discontent? Plucke vp your spirites and bee merry, I cannot abide to heare anie man complaine for want of money. Twice or thrice hee had fet this magnificent face vpon it, and euer *Wolfe* lookd when hee would haue terrifide the table with a found knock of a purffe of angels, and sayd, There's for thee, paye mee when thou art able: but with him there was no such matter, for he put his hand in his pocket but to scrub his arme a little that itcht, and not to pluck out anie cash, which with him is a stranger shape than euer *Cacus* shrowded in his den, and would make him, if he should chop on anie such churlish lumpe vnawares, to admire & bleffe himselfe, with

*Quis nouus his nostris successit sedibus hospes.*

Iesu how comes this to passe? heere is such geere as I neuer saw? So bleffe himselfe he could not, but beeing a little more roundly put to it, he was faine to confesse, that / he was a poore impecunious creature, & had not traffiquit a great while for anie of these commodities of *Santa Cruz*, but as soone as euer his rents came vp, which he expected euerie howre (though I could neuer heare of anie he had, more than his ten shillings

a yeare at *Trinitie Hall*, if he haue that) he would moſt munificently congratulate, correſpond, and ſimpathize with him in al interchangeable viciffitude of kindnes ; & let not the current of time ſeeme too protractiue, extended, or breed anie diſunion betwixt them, for he would accelerate & feſtinate his procraftinating miniſters and commiſſaries in the countrey, by Letters as expedite as could bee. I giue him his true dialect and right varniſh of elocution, not varying one I tittle from the high ſtraine of his harmonious phraſe, wherein he puts downe *Hermogenes* with his *Art of Rhetorique*, and ſo farre outſtrips ouer-tunged Beldam *Roome*, or her ſuper-delicate baſtard daughter ceremonious diſſembling *Italy*, as *Europe* puts down all the other parts of the *World* in populous ſocieties and fertilenes. A *Gentleman*, a friend of mine, that was no ſtraunger to ſuch bandyings as had paſt, bewixt vs, was deſirous to ſee how he lookt ſince my ſtrapadoing and torturing him ; in which ſpleene he went and enquired for him : anſwere was made he was but new riſen, and if it wold pleaſe him to ſtay, he would come down to him anon. Two howres good by the clocke he attended his pleaſure, while he (as ſome of his fellow-Inmates haue ſince related vnto mee) ſtood acting by the glaſſe, all his geſtures he was to uſe all the day

after, and currying & smudging and pranking himfelfe vnmeafurably. *Post varios casus*, his cafe of tooth-pikes, his combe cafe, his cafe / of head-brufhes and beard-brufhes run ouer, & *tot discrimina rerum*, rubbing cloathes of all kindes, downe he came, and after the *bazelos manus*, with amplifications and complements hee belaboured him till his eares tingled, and his feet ak'd againe. Neuer was man fo furfetted and ouer-gorged with Englifh, as hee cloyd him with his generous fpirites, renumeration of gratuities, ftopping the pofternes of ingratitude, bearing the launcier too feure into his imperfections, and trauerfing the ample forreft of interlocution. The Gentleman fwore to mee, that vpon his firft apparition (till he difclofed himfelfe) he tooke him for an Vfher of a dancing Schoole, neither doth he greatly differ from it, for no Vfher of a dauncing Schoole was euer fuch a *Baffia Dona* or *Baffia de umbra de umbra des los pedes*, a kiffer of the fhadow of your feetes fhadow, as he is. I haue perufed vearfes of his, written vnder his owne hand to *Sir Philip Sidney*, wherein he courted him as he were another *Cypariffus* or *Ganimede*; the laft *Gordian* true loues knot, or knitting vp of them is this:

*Sum iecur ex quo te primùm Sydnee vidi,  
Os oculóſque regit, cogit amare iecur.*

*All liuer am I, Sidney, since I saw thee ;  
My mouth eyes rules it, and to loue doth draw  
mee.*

Not halfe a yeare fince, comming out of *Lincolnshyre*, it was my hap to take *Cambridge* in my waye, where I had not beene in fixe yeare before, when by wonderfull destenie, who (in the same Inne and very next chamber to mee, parted but by a wainscot doore that was naild vp, either vnwitting of other) should be lodged but his *Gabrielship*, that, in a manner, had liu'd as long a Pilgrim from thence as I. Euerie circumstance I cannot stand to /reckon vp, as how wee came to take knowledge of one anothers being there, or what a \*stomacke I had to haue scratcht with him, but that the nature of the place hinderd mee, where it is as ill as pettie treason, to look but awry on the sacred person of a Doctour, and I had plotted my reuenge otherwise ; as also of a meeting, or conference, on his part desired, wherein all quarrells might be discusst and drawne to an attonement, but *non vult fac*, I had no fancie to it : for once before I had bin so coufend by his colloging, though personally we neuer met face to face, yet by trouch-men and vant-curriers betwixt vs, nor could it fettle in my conscience, to loofe so much paines I had tooke in new arraying & furbushing him, or that a publique

wrong in Print was to be so sleightly flubberd ouer in priuate, with Come, come, giue me your hand, let vs bee frends, and therevpon I drinke to you. And a further doubt there was if I had tasted of his beife and porredge at *Trinity Hal* as he desired, (*notandum est*, for the whole fortnight together that he was in *Cambridge*, his Commons ran in the Colledge detriments, as the greatest curtesie hee could doo the House, whereof he was, to eate vp their meate and neuer pay anie thing) ; If I had (I fay) rusht in my selfe, and two or three hungrie Fellowes more, and cryde, Doo you want anie guesstes? what, nothing but bare Commons ; it had beene a question (confidering the good-will that is betwixt vs) whether he wold haue lent me a precious dram more than ordinarie, to helpe digestion : he may be such another craftie mortring Druggeir, or Italian porredge seafoner, for anie thing I euer saw in his complexion. That word complexion is dropt foorth in good time, for to describe to you / his complexion & composition, entred I into this tale by the way, or tale I found in my way riding vp to *London*. It is of an adust, swarth, chollericke dye, like restie bacon, or a dride scatefish ; so leane and so meagre, that you wold thinke (like the Turks) he obseru'd 4 Lents in a yere, or take him for the Gentlemans man

in the *Courtier*, who was so thin cheekd and gaunt and staru'd, that as he was blowing the fire with his mouth, the smoke tooke him vp, like a light strawe, and carried him to the top or funnell of the chimney, wher he had flowne out God knowes whether, if there had not bin crosse barres ouerwhart that stayde him; his skin riddled and crumpled like a peice of burnt parchment; & more channels and creases he hath in his face, than there be Fairie circles on *Salisbury Plaine*, and wrinkles & frets of old age, than characters on Christs Sepulcher in *Mount Caluarie*, on which euerie one that comes scrapes his name, and sets his marke, to shewe that hee hath been there: so that whosoever shall behold him,

*Esse putet Boreæ triste furentis opus,*

will sweare on a booke I haue brought him lowe, and shrowdly broken him: which more to confirme, look on his head and you shall finde a gray haire for euerie line I haue writ against him; and you shall haue all his beard white too, by that time hee hath read ouer this booke. For his stature, he is such another pretie *Iacke a Lent* as boyes throw at in the streete, and lookes in his blacke sute [of veluet, like one of these ieat droppes which diuers weare at their eares in stead of a iewell. A smudge peice of a hand-



some fellow it hath beene in his dayes, but now he is olde and past his best, and fit for nothing but to be a Noble mans porter, or a Knight of / *Windsor*, cares haue so crazed him, and disgraces to the verie bones consumed him ; amongst which hys missing of the Vniuersitie Oratorship, wherein Doctor *Perne* besteaded him, wrought not the lightliest with him ; and if none of them were, his course of life is such, as would make anie man looke ill on it, for he wil endure more hardnes than a Camell, who in the burning sands will liue foure dayes without water, & feeds on nothing but thistles and wormewood, & such lyke: no more doth he feed on anie thing, when he is at *Saffron-walden*, but sheepes trotters, pork-nells, and butterd rootes ; and other-while in an Hexameter meditation, or when hee is inuenting a new part of *Tully*, or hatching such another Paradoxe, as that of *Nicholaus Copernicus* was, who held, that the Sun remains immoueable in the center of the World, & that the Earth is moou'd about the Sunne, he would be so rapt, that hee would remaine three dayes and neither eate nor drinke, and within doores he will keepe seauen yeare together, and come not abroad so much as to Church. The like for seauen and thirtie weekes space together he did, while he lay at *Wolfe*s copying against mee, neuer stirring

out of dores or being churched all that while, but like those in the West country, that after the *Paulin* hath cald them, or they haue seene a spirit, keep themselves darke 24. howres ; so after I had plaid the spirit in hanting him in my 4. Letters cōfuted, he could by no means endure the light, nor durst venter himself abroad in the open aire for manie mōths after, for feare he should be fresh blasted by all mens scorne and derision. My instructions of him are so ouerflowing and numberlesse, that except I abridge them, my Book will grow / such a bouncer, that those which buy it must bee faine to hire a porter to carry it after them in a basket. For breuitie sake I omit twentie things, as the conflict betwixt my Hostesse of the Dolphin in *Cambridge*, and him at my beeing there, about his lying in her house a fortnight, and keeping one of the best Chambers, yet neuer offering to spend a penie ; the Hackney-mens of *Saffron-walden* pursuing him for their horses, he hiring them but for three dayes and keeping them fifteene, & telling him very flatly, when he went about to excuse it, that they could not spare them from their Cart so long, they being Cart horses which they set him on. The description of that poore *Iohn a Droynes* his man, whom he had hyred for that iourney, a great big-boand thresher, put in a blue

coate too fhort waſted for him, & a fute made of the inner linings of a fute turnd outward, being white canuas pinkt vpon cotton ; his intollerable boasting at *Wolfes* to ſuch as wold hold him chat, & he could draw to talk with him, that he thought no man in *England* had more learning than himſelfe ; hys threatening anie Noble-man whatſoeuer, that durſt take my part, and vowing he would do this and that to him if he ſhould ; his incenſing my L. Mayor againſt me that then was, by directing vnto him a perſwaſiue pamphlet to perfecute mee, and not to let ſlip the aduantage hee had againſt mee, and reporting certaine words I ſhuld ſpeake againſt him that Chriſtmas at a Tauerne in *London*, when I was in the *Ile of Wight* then and a great while after. His inciting the Preacher at *Poules Croſſe*, that lay at the ſame houſe in *Wood-ſtrete* which hee did, to preach manifeſtly againſt *Maſter Lilly* and mee, with, *Woe to the Printer, woe to the Seller, woe to the Buyer, woe to the Author.* But in none of theſe will I inſiſt, which are remnants in compariſon of the whole piece I haue to ſhew ; only I will haue a ſhort tutch at *Wolfes* and his parting, and ſo make an end of an old ſong, and bid god night to this Hiſtorie.

*Pierſes Supererogation* printed, the charge whereof the Doctor had promiſt to defray and be count-

able to *Wolfe* for, amounting (with his diet) to 36 pounds, from *Saffron-walden* no argent would be heard of, wherefore, downe he must go amongst his tenaunts, as he pretended (which are no other than a company of beggers, that lye in an out barne of his mothers sometimes) and fetch vp the grand summes, or *legem pone*. To accomplish this, *Wolfe* procur'd him horses and money for his expences, lent him one of his Prentises (for a serving creature) to grace him, clapping an olde blue coate on his backe, which was one of my Lord of *Harfords* liueries (he pulling the badge off) & so away they went. *Saint Christopher* be their speed, and send them well backe againe ; but so prayes not our *Dominico Ciuilian*, for he had no such determination : but as soone as euer he had left *London* behinde him, he insinuated with this *Iuventus* to run away frō his Master, and take him for his good Lord and supporter. The Page was easily mellowd with his attractive eloquēce, as what heart of adamant, or enclosed in a Crocodyles skin (which no yron will pierce) that hath the power to withstand the Mercurian heauenly charme of hys Rhetorique ? With him he staves halfe a yere, rubbing his toes, and following him, with his sprinkling glasse & his boxe of kissing comfets, from place to place ; whiles his Master, fretting & chafing to be thus colted

of both of / them, is readie to send out Proceſſe for the Doct<sup>r</sup>, and get his Nouice cride in euerie market Towne in *Eſſex* : but they preuented him, for the impe or ſtripling, being almoſt ſtaru'd in this time of his beeing with him, gaue him warning he would no longer ſerue him, but wold home to his maſter what euer ſhift he made. *Gabriell* thought it not amiſſe to take him at his word, becauſe his clothes were all greaſie and worne out, & hee is neuer wont to keepe anie man longer than the fute laſteth he brings with him, and then turne him to graſſe and get one in newe trappings; and euer picke quarrells with him before the yeares end, becauſe hee would be ſure to pay him no wages: yet in his prouident forecaſt, he concluded it better policie for him to ſend him backe to his Maſter, than he ſhould goe of his owne accord, and whereas he was to make a iourney to *London* within a weeke or ſuch a matter, to haue his blue coate (being deſtitute of euer another trencher-carrier) credit him vp, though it were thrid bare. So conſidered, and ſo done, at an Inne at *Iſlington* hee alights, and there keepes him aloofe, *London* being too hot for him. His retinue (or attendaunt), with a whole cloke-bag full of commendations to his maſter, he diſmiſſeth, and in ſtead of the 36. pounds hee ought him, wild him to certifie him, that verie ſhortly hee would

fend him a couple of Hennes to Shroue with. *Wolfe*, receiuing this meſſage, and holding himſelfe palpablye flouted therein, went and feed Baylies, and gets one *Scarlet* (a frend of his) to goe and draw him foorth, & hold him with a tale whiles they might ſteale on him and arreſt him. The watch-word giu'n them when they ſhould ſeaze vpon him, was *Wolfe* (*I muſt needes ſay*) *hath / vſde you verie groſely*: and to the intent he might ſuſpect nothing by *Scarlets* comming, there was a kind letter fram'd in *Wolfeſ* name, with *To the right worſhipfull of the Lawes*, in a great Text hand, for a ſuperſcription on the out-ſide; and vnderneath at the bottome, *Your worſhips euer to commaund, and preſt to doo you ſeruice*, Iohn Wolfe. The contents of it were about the talking with his Lawier, and the eager proceeding of his Siſter in law againſt him. This letter deliuered and read, and *Scarlet* and he (after the taſting of a cup of dead beere, that had ſtood pawling by him in a pot three dayes) deſcending into ſome conference, he began to finde himſelfe ill apaid with *Wolfeſ* encroaching vpon him, and aſking him money for the Printing of his Booke, and his diet, whiles he was cloſe priſoner, attending and toyling about it, & obieſting how other men of leſſe deſert wer liberally recompenſt for their paines, whereas he (whoſe worth ouer-balaunſt the proudeſt) muſt be

constrained to hire men to make themselves rich. I appeale to you (quoth hee) whether euer anie mans workes sold like mine? I, euen from a childe, good master Doctor, replide *Scarlet*, and made a mouth at him ouer his shoulder, so soothing him on forward till the Baylies Cue came of *Wolfes* abusing him verie grosely, which they not failing to take at the first rebound, stept into the roome boldly (as they were two well bumbasted swaggering fat bellies, hauing faces as broad as the backe of a chimney, and as big as a towne bag-pudding) and clapping the Doctor with a lusty blow on the shoulder that made his legs bow vnder him, and his guts cry quag againe, by your leaue, they said vnto him (in a thundering yeoman vsfers *diapason*) in / Gods name and the Queenes wee doo arrest you. Without more pause, away they hurried him, & made him beleue they wold carry him into the Cittie, where his Creditor was, whē comming vnder *Newgate*, they told him they had occasion to goe speake with one there, and so thrust him in before them for good manners sake, because he was a Doctour, and their better, bidding the Keeper, as soone as euer he was in, to take charge of him. Some lofty tragicall Poet helpe mee, that is dayly conuerfant in the fierce encounters of Raw-head and bloody-bones, and whose pen, like the Plowes in Spayne that often

ftumble on golde vaines, ftill fplits and ftumpes itfelfe againft olde yron and raking ore, battred Armour and broken Truncheons, to recount and exprefle the more than *Herculean* fury he was in, when hee fawe hee was fo notably betrayd, and bought and folde. Hee fumde, he ftampt, he buffeted himfelfe about the face, beat his head againft the walls, and was ready to byte the flefh off his armes, if they had not hindred him: out of doores he would haue gone (as I cannot blame him) or hee fwore hee would teare down the walls and fet the houfe on fire, if they refifted him: whither, quoth he, you villaines, haue you brought mee? To Newgate, good Mafter Doctour, with a lowe legge they made anfwer: I knowe not where I am. In Newgate, agayne replied they, good Mafter Doctour. Into fome blinde corner you haue drawne me to be murdred: to no place (replied they the third time) but to Newgate, good Mafter Doctour. Murder, murder, (he cryed out): fome body breake in, or they will murder mee. No murder but an action of debt, fayd they, good Mafter Doctour. O you prophane / *Plebeyans*, exclaymed hee, I will mafacre, I will crucifie you for prefuming to lay hands thus on my reuerent perfon. All this would not ferue him, no more than *Hackets* counterfet madneffe would keepe him from the Gallowes, but vp he was



had and shewed his lodging, where hee should lye by it, and willed to deliuer vp his weapon. That wrung him on the withers worfe than all the rest. What my armes, my defence, my weapon, my dagger, quoth hee : my life then, I fee, is conspired against, when you seek to bereaue me of the instruments that should secure it. They ratled him vp foundly, and told him if he would be conformable to the order of the prison so it was, otherwise hee should bee forc't : force him no forces, no such mechanically drudges should haue the honor of his artillery : marry, if some worthy Maiestrate came, as their Master or Mistresse, it might be vppon good conditions, for his lifes safetie and preferuation hee woulde surrender. The mistresse of the house (her husband being absent) vnderstanding of his folly, came vp to him, and went about to perswade him. At her sight somewhat calm'd hee was, as it is a true amorous Knight, and hath no power to deny any thing to ladies & gentlewomen, & he tolde her if she would command her seruants forth (whom hee scornd should haue theyr eyes so much illuminated as to beholde any martiall engin of his) hee would, in all humility, dispoyle himselfe of it. Shee so farre yeilded to him, when as soone as they were out, he runs and swaps the doore too, & drawes his dagger vpon her with, O I will kill thee, what

could I doo to thee nowe? And so extreemely terrified her, that shee scritch'd out to her seruants, who burst in in heapes, as thinking / he would haue rauisht her. Neuer was our *Tapthartharath* (though hee hath run through manie briers) in the like ruthfull pickle hee was then, for to the bolts he must, amongst theeues and rogues, and tast of the Widdowes Almes for drawing his dagger in a Prison: frō which there was no deliuerance, if basely hee had not falne vppon his knees and askt hir forgiuenes. Dinner being readie, he was cald downe, & there beeing a better man than hee present, who was plac'd at the vpper end of the boord, for very spite that hee might not sit highest, he straight flung to his chamber againe, and vowd by heauen and earth and all the flesh on his backe, he would famish himselfe, before he would eate a bit of meate as long as he was in *Newgate*. How inuiolably hee kept it, I will not conceale from you. About a two howres after, when he felt his craw emptie, and his stomacke began to wamble, hee writ a Supplication to his Hostesse, that he might speak with her; to whome (at her approaching) hee recited what a rash vow he had made, and what a commotion there was in his entrayles or pudding-houise, for want of food; wherefore if she would steale to him a byt secretly, and let there be no words of it, hee would, I marry would

hee (when hee was releast) perfourme mountaines. She (in pittie of him) seeing him a brain-sicke bedlam, and an innocent that had no sense to governe himselfe, being loth he should be damnd and go to hell for a meales meate, hauing vowd, and through famine readie to breake it, got her husband to go forth with him out of dores, to some Cookes shop at *Pye-corner* there-about, or (as others will haue it) to the Tap-house vnder the prison ; where hauing eaten sufficient / his hungrie bodie to sustaine, the diuell a scute had he to pay the reckoning, but the keepers credite must goe for it. How he got out of this Castle Dolorus, if anie be with childe to know, let them enquire of the Minister then seruing at *Saint Albanes* in *Wood-street*, who in Christian charitie, onely for the names sake (not being acquainted with him before) entred bōd for him to answere it at law, & satisfied the house for his lodging and *Mangerie*. But being restored to the open aire, the case with him was little altred, for no rooffe had he to hide his noddle in, or whither he might go to set vp his rest, but in the streets vnder a bulk he should haue been constrained to haue kenneld, & chalkt out his cabbins, if the said Minister had not the second time stood his friend, and preferd him to a chamber at one *Rolfes*, a Serieants in *Wood-streete* ; whom (as I take it) he also procured to

be equally bound with him for his new coufens apparance to the law, which he neuer did, but left both of them in the lurtch for him : and running in debt with *Rolfe* beside for houle-roome and diet, one day when he was from home, he clofely conuaid away his truncke foorth of doores, and shewde him a fayre paire of heeles. At *Saffron-walden* (for the moft part) from that his flight to this prefent hath hee mewd and coopt vp himfelfe inuifible, being counted for dead & no tidings of him, till I came in the winde of him at *Cambridge*. And fo I winde vp his thrid of life, which, I feare, I haue drawne out too large, although in three quarters of it (of purpose to curtall it) I haue left defcant, and taskt me to plaine fong : whereof, that it is anie other than plaine truth let no man diftruft, it being by good men and true (word for word as I let it fly amongst / you) to mee in the feare of God vttered, all yet alieue to confirme it. Wherefore fettle your faith immoueably, and now you haue heard his life, iudge of his doctrine accordingly.

Carnead. *His life and doctrine may both be to vs an enfample, for fince the raigne of Queen Gueniuer was there neuer feene worfe.*

Import. *Yet for all he is fuch a vaine Bafilifco, and Captaine Crack-ftone, in all his aétions & conuerfation, & fwarmeth in vile Canniball words,*

*there is some good matter in his booke against thee.*

*Respond.* We will trie that matter immediately, for my minde euer giuing mee, that wee should haue you, and such like Humorists of your Faction, runne from one matter to another, & from the matter to the manner, and from the manner to the forme, and from the forme to the cause, and from the cause to the effect, I prouided to match you at all weapons. And here, next his life, I haue drawen an Abridgement, or Inuentorie, of all the materiall Tractates and Contents of hys Booke.

*Import.* *Then thou hast done well: for it is it that I all this while lookt for. I pray thee, let me read it my selfe.*

*A Summarie, or breife Analysys, of such matters as are handled in the Doctors Booke.*

*Inprimis*, one Epistle, of a sheete and more of paper, to his gentle & liberall frends, *Master Barnabe Barnes, Master Iohn Thorius, Master Anthonie Chute*, and euerie fauourable Reader.

*Carnead.* / *O ho, those whom hee calls the three orient wits. Mine eyes are partly accessarie vnto it. It is to thanke them for their curteous Letters and commendatorie Sonnets, writ to him from a farre, as namely, out of the hall into the kitchen*

*at Wolfes, where altogether at one time they lodged and boorded. With a great manie maidenly excuses of, tis more of your gentlenes than my deseruing, and I cannot, without blushing repeate, and without shame remember. Then he comes vpon thee with, Ple, Ple, Ple.*

*Respond.* What should I say, *I will and commaund*, like a Prince? hee might as well write against *Poules* for hauing three *Iles* in it.

*Carnead.* *Hee calls thee the greene Popinjay, & saies thou art thine owne idoll.*

*Respond.* Let him either shew how or wherein, or I will not beleue him, & my negatiue (in any ground in *England*) is as good as his affirmatiue.

*Carnead.* *And so proceeds with complement and a little more complement, and a crust of quippes, and a little more complement after that; then he falls in exhorting those his three Patrons to goe forward in maturitie, as they haue begun in pregnancie; whose Parthenophils and Parthenopes embellished, and Shores Wife eternized, shall euerlastingly testifie what they are.*

*Respond.* And so haue I testifide for them what they are, which will last time enough.

*Carnead.* *Hee bids Barnabe of the Barnes, bee the gallant Poet like Spencer, or the valiant Souldiour like Baskeruile; and euer remember his French Seruice vnder such a Generall.*

*Respond.* What his Soldiourship is I cannot iudge, but /if you haue euer a chaine for him to runne away with, as hee did with a Noblemans Stewards chayne at his Lords entfalling at *Windfore*; or if you would haue anie rymes to the tune of *stink-a-pisse*, hee is for you. In one place of his *Parthenophill and Parthenope*, wishing no other thing of Heauen, but that hee might bee transformed to the Wine his Mistres drinks, and so passe thorough her.

*Bentiv.* *Therein he was verie ill aduise, for so the next time his Mistres made water, he was in danger to be cast out of her fauour.*

*Respond.* Of late he hath set foorth another Booke, which hee entitles no lesse than *A deuine Centurie of Sonets*, and prefixeth for his posie,

*Altera Musa venit, quid ni sit & alter Apollo?*

As much to say, as why may not my Muse bee as great an *Apollo*, or God of Poetrie, as the proudest of them? but it comes as farre short, as *Paris Garden* Cut of the height of a Cammell, or a Cocke-boate of a Carricke: such another deuice it is as the godly Ballet of *Iohn Carelesse*, or the Song of *Greene sleeues* moralized.

*Carnead.* *For his Caualliership, since thou art not instructed in it, let mee tell thee, it is lewder by nine score times than his Poetry; since his*

doughtie seruice in France fve yeares agoe, I not forgetting him: where, hauing followd the Campe for a weeke or two, and seeing there was no care had of keeping the Queenes Peace, but a man might haue his braines knockt out, and no Iustice or Cunstable neere hand to send foorth precepts, and make hue and crie after the murdrers; without farther tarrying or consultation, to the Generall he went, and told him he did not like of this quarrelling kinde of life; and common occupation / of murdring, wherein (without anie Iurie or triall, or giuing them so much leaue, as to saye their praiers) men were run thorough, and had their throats cut, both against Gods lawes, her Maiesties lawes, & the lawes of all Nations: wherefore hee desir'd license to depart, for hee stood euerie howre in feare and dread of his person, and it was alwaies his praier, From suddain death, good Lord, deliuer vs. Vpon this motion, there were diuers warlike Knights and principall Captaines, who, rather than they would bee bereau'd of his pleasant companie, offred to picke out a strong guard amongst them, for the safe engarisoning and better shiielding him from perrill. Two stept foorth and presented themselues as muskettiers before him, a third and fourth as targatiers behinde him, a fifth and sixt vowd to trie it out at the push of the pike before the malicious foe should



*inuade him. But home hee would ; nothing could stay him, to finish Parthenophil and Parthenope, and write in praise of Gabriell Haruey.*

*Confil. Hee was wise, hee lou'd no blowes : but what said the Doct̃or to his other two copefmates ?*

*Carnead. Why thus : Be thou, Iohn, the many tungd linguist like Androwes, or the curious Intelligencer, like Bodley ; & neuer forget thy Netherlandish Traine vnder him, that taught the prince of Nauarre, now the valorous King of France.*

*Respond. Of this Iohn Thorius more sparingly I wil speake, because hee hath made his peace with mee, & there bee in him fundrie good parts of the Tungs and otherwife ; though thirtie parts comming behinde & limping after Doctor Androwes : who (if it bee no offence so to compare him) is *tanquam Paulus in cathedra*, / powerfull preaching like *Paul* out of his chaire ; and his Church another *Pantheon*, or *Templum omnium deorum*, the absoluteſt Oracle of all found deuinitie heere amongſt vs ; hee, mixing the two feuerall properties of an Orator and a Poet both in one, which is not onely to perſwade, but to win admiration. *Thorius*, being of that modeſtie and honeſtie I aſcribe to him, cannot but bee irkſomly aſhamed, to bee reſembled ſo hyperborically, and no leſſe agreeu'd than maſter*

*Bodley* (a Gentleman in our Common-wealth of singular desertiue reckoning & industrie, beeing at this present her Maiesties Agent in the Low countries) ought he to bee at the hellish detested *Iudas* name of an Intelligencer, which the Doctor in the way of friendship hath throwne vpon him. Master *Bodley* calls him rascall & villaine for his labour, and before his going ouer was mad to know where he might hunt him out to bee reuengd: which both hee and *Thorius* haue reason for, since but to be couertly suspected for an Intelligencer, (much more to be publikely registred in Print for such a flearing false brother or *Ambodexter*) is to make eyther of them worse pointed and wondered at than a cuckold or wittall, and set them vp as common marks for euerie iackanapes Prentise to kicke, spit, or throw durt at. To bee an Intelligencer is to haue oathes at will, and thinke God nere regards them; to frame his religion and alleageance to his Prince, according to euerie companie he comes in: a Iew he is, that but for the spoile loues no man; a curre, that flatters & fawns vpon euerie one, low crowching by the ground like a tumbler, till hee may spie an aduantage, and pluck out his throate. An ingratefull slaue, that there spendeth the/bitterest of his venome, where hee hath receiued most benefites; a hang-man, that

dispatcheth all that come vnder his hands ; a drunken serieant, or sumner, that could not liue if (like the diuell) hee did not, from time to time, enquire after the finnes of the people ; a necessarie member in a State to bee vſe to cut off vnneceſſarie members. Such fame hath he preferd Maſter *Bodley* too, and wiſheth *Thorius* to emulate. By his Netherlandiſhe trayne vnder him, that taught the Prince of *Nauarre*, now the valorous King of *France*, is not to bee gathered that hee was ſchoolefellow to the King of *France*, as he would faine put the world in a fooles Paradiſe, becauſe hee hath ſonnetted it in hys praiſe, but that hee was doctour *Coranus* ſonne of *Oxford*, who was Tutor to the ſaid King, as well he might bee, and that no argument his ſonne ſhould be ſo well improou'd as he is.

Carnead. *The laſt of them is Chute, to whome hee thus dilateth.* Be thou *Anthonie* the flowing Oratour, like *Doue*, and the ſkilfull Herald, like *Clarencius* ; and euer remember thy *Portugall* Voyage vnder *Don Anthonio*.

*Reſpond.* *Chute*, is hee ſuch a high Clarke in hys Bookes ? I knew when hee was but a low Clarke, and carried an Attornies bookes after him. But this I will ſay for him, though hee bee dead and rotten, and by his obſequies hath preuented

the vengeance I meant to haue executed vpon him ; of a youth that could not vnderstand a word of Latine, hee lou'd lycoras, and drunke posset curd, the best that euer put cuppe to mouth ; and for his Oratorship, it was such, that I haue seene him *non plus* in giuing the charge at the creating of / a new Knight of *Tobacco* ; though, to make amends since, he hath kneaded and daub'd vp a Commedie, called The Transformation of the King of *Trinidadoes* two Daughters, Madame *Panachea* and the Nymphe *Tobacco*: and to approue his Heraldrie, scutchend out the honourable Armes of the smoakie Societie. His voiage vnder *Don Anthonio* was nothing so great credit to him, as a French Varlet of the chamber is ; nor did he follow *Anthonio* neither, but was a Captaines Boye that scornd writing and reading, and helpt him to set downe his accounts, and score vp dead payes. But this was our *Graphiel Hagiels* tricke of *Wily Beguily* herein, that whereas he could get no man of worth to crie *Placet* to his workes, or meeter it in his commendation, those worthlesse Whippets and Iack Strawes hee could get, he would seeme to enable and compare with the highest. Hereby hee thought to connycatch the simple world, and make them beleeeue, that these and these great men, euerie waye futable to Syr *Thomas Baskeruile*, Master *Bodley*, Doctor *Andrewes*, Doctor *Doue*,

*Clarencius* and Master *Spencer*, had seperately contended to outstrip *Pindarus* in his *Olympicis*, and fly aloft to the highest pitch, to stellifie him aboue the cloudes, and make him shine next to *Mercury*. Here some little digression I must borrow, to reuenge his base allusion of Sir *Thomas Baskeruile*, euen as I haue done of Doctor *Androwes*; neither of them being men that euer saluted mee, or I rest bound vnto in anie thing, otherwise than by Doctor *Androwes* own desert, and Master *Lillies* immoderate commending him, by little and little I was drawne on to bee an auditor of his: since when, whensoever I heard him, I thought / it was but hard and scant allowance that was giu'n him, in comparison of the incomparable gifts that were in him. For Sir *Thomas Baskeruile*, *France*, *England*, the *Low Countries*, & *India*, acknowledgeth him; and though it was neuer my hap, but once in a young Knights Chamber in the *Strand* (none of my coldest well-wishers) to light in his companie, yet for Syr *Roger Williams* testimonie of him (a noble Gentleman that a yeare and a halfe before his death, I was excessiuely beholding too, & on whom I haue vowd, when my busines are a little ouercome, to bestow a memoriall Epitaph, such as *Plato* would in no more but foure verses to bee set vpon the graues of the dead) downe his throate

I will thrust this turn-broach comparison of a chicken and a chrisome with one of the most tryed Souldiours of Christendome. Doctor *Doue* and *Clarencius* I turne loose to bee their owne Arbitrators and Aduocates ; the one being eloquent inough to defend himselfe, and the other a Vice roy & next Heyre apparant to the King of Herald, able to emblazon him in his right colours, if hee finde hee hath sustained any losse by him : as also, in like fort, Master *Spencer*, whom I doo not thrust in the lowest place, because I make the lowest valuation of, but as wee vse to set the *Summ' tot'* alway vnderneath, or at the bottome, he being the *sum' tot'* of whatsoeuer can be said of sharpe inuention and schollership.

Confil. *Of the Doctor it may be said, as Ouid sayth of the Scritch owle.*

Aliisque (dolens) fit causa dolendi.

*Hee cannot bee content to bee miserable himselfe, but hee must draw others to miscarrie with him. And as Plato had / his best beloued Boy Agatho, Socrates his Alcibiades, Virgill his Alexis ; so hath hee his Barnabe and Anthony for his minions and sweet-harts : though therein I must needes tell him (as Fabritius the Romane Consull writ to Pirrhus when he sent him back his Phisition that offred to poyson him) hee hath made as ill choyce of frends as of*

*enemies ; seeking, like the Panther, to cure himselfe with mans dung, and with the verie excrements of the rubbishesst wits that are, to restore himselfe to his bloud, and repaire his credit and estimation.*

*Bentiv. If his Patrons bee such Peter Pingles and Moundragons, hee cannot chuse but bee sixtie times a more poore Slaunonian arse-worme.*

*Respond.* Tender itchie brainde infants, they car'd not what they did, so they might come in print : and of that straine are a number of mushrumpes more, who pester the World with Pamphlets before they haue heard of *Terence Pamphilus*, & can construe & pearse *Proh Dii immortales* ; being like those barbarous People in the hot Countries, who, when they haue bread to make, doo no more but clap the dowe vpon a poast on the out-side of their houses, and there leaue it to the Sunne to bake ; so their indigested conceits (farre rawer than anie dowe) at all aduentures vpon the poastes they clap, pluck them off who's will : and if (like the Sunne) anie man of iudgement (though in scorne) do but looke vpon them, they thinke they haue strooke it dead, and made as good a batch of Poetrie as may be. Neither of these princockeesses (*Barnes* or *Chute*) once cast vp their noses towards *Powles Church-yard*, or so much as knew how to knock at a Printing house dore, till they comforted themselues with *Haruey*, who infected / them

within one fortnight with his owne spirit of Bragganisme : which after so increased and multiplied in them, as no man was able to endure them. The first of them (which is *Barnes*) presently vppon it, because hee would bee noted, getting him a strange payre of *Babylonian* britches, with a cod-pisse as big as a *Bolognian* sawcedge, and so went vp and downe Towne, and shewd himselfe in the Prefence at Court, where he was generally laught out by the Noble-men and Ladies : and the other (which is *Chute*) because *Haruey* had praised him for his Oratorship & Heraldry, to approue himselfe no lesse than hee had giu'n his word for him, sets his mouth of a new key, and would come foorth with such *Kenimnawo* compt metaphors and phraſes, that *Edge* was but a botcher to him ; and to emblazon his Heraldrie, he painted himself like a Curtizan, which no stationers boy in *Poules Church-yard* but discouered and pointed at. One of the best Articles against *Barnes* I haue ouerflit, which is, that he is in print for a braggart in that vniuerſall applauded Latine poem of master *Campions* ; where, in an Epigram entituled *In Barnum*, beginning thus,

*Mortales decem tela inter Gallica cæſos,*

he shewes how hee bragd, when he was in *France*,  
he slue ten men, when (fearfull cowbaby) he



neuer heard peice shot off but hee fell flat on his face. To this effect it is, though the words somewhat varie.

Carnead. Alloune, alloune, *let vs march, and from armes and skirmishing, cast thy selfe in the armes of a sweete Gentlewoman, that here, at the end of the Epistle, stands readie to embrace thee.* Gabriell calls her the excellent Gentlewoman, his *patroneffe, or rather championesse,* in this quarrell, meeter by nature, and fitter by nurture, to bee an inchaunting Angell with a white quill, than a tormenting furie with her blacke incke.

*Respond.* What, is he like a Tinker, that neuer trauailes without his wench and his dogge? or like a *Germanè*, that neuer goes to the warres without his *Tannakin* and her Cocke on her shoulder? That Gentlewoman (if she come vnder my fifts) I will make a gentle-woman, as Doctor *Perne* saide of his mans wife,

*Tunc plena voluptas,  
Cum pariter victi fœmina virq. iacent.*

Then it is sport worth the seeing, when he and his woman lye crouching for mercie vnder my feete. I will bestow more cost in belabouring her, because, throughout the whole pawnch of his booke, hee is as infinite in commending her, as Saint *Ierome* in praise of Virginitie; and

oftener mentions her, than *Virgill* & *Theocritus Amarillis*. In one place he calls her *the one ſhee*, in another *the credible Gentlewoman*, in a third *the heauenly plant*, in the fourth *a new ſtarre in Caſſiopeia*, in the fifth *the heauenly creature*, in the fixth *a Lion in the field of Minerua*, in the ſeuenth *a right Bird of Mercuries winged chariot*, with a hundred ſuch like : he ſaith, *ſhee hath read Homer, Virgill, the diuine Archetypes of Hebrue, Greeke, and Romane valour, Plutarch, Polien, Agrippa, Tyraquell.*

Bentiv. *I haue found him, I haue the traēt of him: hee thinkes in his owne perſon if hee ſhould raile groſely, it will bee a diſcredit to him, and therefore hereafter hee would thruſt forth all his writings vnder the name of a Gentlewoman; who, howſoeuer ſhee ſcolds and playes the vixen neuer ſo, wilbe borne with: and to preuent that he bee / not deſcribe by his alleadging of Authors (which it will hardly bee thought can proceed from a woman) hee caſts forth this Item, that ſhe hath read theſe and theſe books, and is well ſeene in all languages.*

Confil. *Shall we haue a Hare of him then? a male one yeare, and a female another: or as Pliny holds there is male and female of all things vnder heauen, and not ſo much but as of trees and precious ſtoanes; ſo cannot there be a male Confuter, but there muſt be a female confuter too; a Simon*

*Magus, but hee must haue his whoore Silenes ; an Aristotle that sacrificed to his harlot Hermia, but euerie Silius Poeta must imitate him ? Doth he, when his owne wits faile, crie Da Venus confilium ? Holy Saint Venus inspire mee ? But as Bentiuele hath wel put in, Pars minima est ipsa puella sui. I beleeeue it is but a meere copy of his countenaunce, and onely hee does it to breed an opinion in the world, that he is such a great man in Ladies and Gentlewomens bookes, that they are readie to run out of their wits for him, as in the Turkes Alchoron it is written, that 250 Ladies hanged themselues for the loue of Mahomet, and that, like another Numa Pompilius, he doth nothing without his Nymph Egeria.*

*Imp. Nay, if Iupiter ioynd with the Moone (Haruey and his Gentlewoman) conspire against thee, & that, like another Messier Gallan, the hangman of Antwerp, he hath a whole Burdeil vnder his gouvernement, it cannot chuse but goe hard with thee. She will say, as the Italian Lady did, Kill my children as long as thou wilt, here is the mould to make more.*

*Confil. We read that Semiramis was in loue with a Horse, but for a Gentlewoman to bee in loue with an Asse | is such a tricke as neuer was.*

*Respond. It would doo you good to heare how he gallops on in commending her : hee*

fayes shee enuies none, but art in perfon and vertue incorporate, and that she is a *Sappho*, a *Penelope*, a *Minerua*, an *Arachne*, a *Iuno*, yeelding to all that vse her and hers well, that she stands vpon masculine and not feminine termes, & her hoateft fury may be refembled to the paffing of a braue Careere by a *Pegasus*, and wifheth hartily that he could difpofe of her recreations.

Carnead. *Call for a Beadle and haue him away to Bridewell, for in euery fillable he commits lechery.*

Resp. He threats shee will strip my wit into his shirt, were that fayre body of the sweetest *Venus* in print, & that it will then appeare, as in a cleare vrinall, whose wit hath the greene ficknes.

Bent. *If she strip thee to thy shirt, if I were as thee, I wold strip her to her smocke.*

Carnead. *That were to put that fayrest body of Venus in Print, indeede, with a witnes, and then shee neuer need to haue her water cast in an vrinall for the greene sicknes.*

Respond. She may be Queene *Didoes* peere for honestie, for anie dealings I euer yet had with her; but anie Gentlewomans name put in his mouth, it is of more force to discredite it than *Licophrons* penne was to discredite *Penelope*, who, notwithstanding *Homers* praises of her, faith shee lay with all her wooers.

Confil. *Whether ſhee be honeſt or no, he hath done enough to make her diſhoneſt, ſince as Ouid writes to a Leno, Vendibilis culpa facta puella ſua eſt, he hath ſet her commonly to ſale in Poules Church-yard.*

Import. / *Let vs on with our Index or Catalogue, and deſcant no more of her, ſince I am of the minde that, for all the ſtormes & tempeſts Haruey from her denounceth, there is no ſuch woman, but tis onely a Fiction of his, like Menanders Fable or Comedie, cald Theſſala, of women that could pluck back the Moone when they liſted; or Ennius inuention of Dido, who, writing of the deedes of Scipio, firſt gaue life to that Legend. The Epistle Dedicatorie paſt, the Gentlewomans demurre, or Prologue, ſtaggers next after, the firſt line whereof is ſtolne out of the Ballet of Anne Aſkew; for as that begins,*

I am a woman poore and blinde,  
*ſo begins this,*

O Muſes, may a woman poore and blinde,  
*and goes on,*

Iſt poſſible for puling wench to tame  
The furibundall champion of fame?

*Bids thee hazard not panting quill thy aſpen ſelfe, calls thee bombard-goblin, and moſt raili-*

potent for euerie raine ; *then followeth shee with a counter Sonnet, or correction of her owne preamble, where there is nothing but braggardous affronts, white liuerd tronts, where doth the vranie or furie ring, pulcrow implements, Danter's scar-crow Presse ; and endes with, Vlatrix accincta flagello.*

*Respond.* Yea, Madam *Gabriela*, are you such an old ierker? then, Hey ding a ding, vp with your petticoate, haue at your plum-tree : but the style bewraies it, that no other is this good-wife *Megara* but *Gabriel* himself ; so doth the counter-sonnet and the correction of preambles, which is his methode as right as a fiddle. I will neuer open my lips to confute anye rag of it, it confuting / it selfe sufficiently in the verie rehearfall. And so doth that which is annexed to it, of her olde Comedie new intituled, where she saith *her prose is as resolute as Beuis sword*, calls mee *rampant beast in formidable hide*, with I wot not what other *Getulian* flabberies ; scarre-bugges mee with a Comedie which shee hath scrawld and scribeld vp against mee. But wee shall lenuoy him, and trumpe and poope him well enough if the winde come in that doore, and he will needes fall a Comedizing it. Comedie vpon Comedie he shall haue, a Morall, a Historie, a Tragedie, or what hee will. One shal bee called *The Doctors dumpe*,

another, *Haruey and his excellent Gentlewoman, Madame Whipfidoxy*, a third, *The triumphes of Saffron-walden, with the merrie conceits of Wee three*, or, *The three Brothers* ; a fourth, *Stoope Gallant*, or *The Fall of Pride* ; the fifth and last, *A pleasant Enterlude of No Foole to the old Foole*, with a Iigge at the latter ende in English Hexameters of, *O neighbour Gabriell, and his wooing of Kate Cotton*. More than half of one of these I haue done already, and in *Candlemas Tearme* you shal see it acted, though better acted than hee hath been at *Cambridge*, hee can neuer bee ; where vpon euerie stage hee hath beene brought for a Sicophant and a Sow-gelder.

Bent. *Wilt thou haue nere a plucke at him for Danters scar-crow presse, and so abusing thy Printer?*

*Resp.* In pudding time you haue spoken : my Printer, who euer, shall sustaine no damage by me : & where hee tearmeth his Presse a *Scar-crow Presse*, he shall find it will *scare* & crow ouer the best Presse in *London*, that shall Print a Reply to This. Hee that dares most, let him trie it (as none will trie it that hath a care to liue by / his trade, not a hundred of anie Impression of the Doctors bookes euer felling). My Printers Wife too, hee hath had a twitch at in two or three places about the midst of his booke, and makes a *maulkin* & a shoo-clout of her, talkes of her *moody tung*, and

*that ſhe wil teach the ſtorme winde to ſcolde Engliſh;* but let him looke to himſelfe, for though in all the time I haue lyne in her Houſe, and as long as I haue knowen her, I neuer ſaw anie ſuch thing by her; yet ſince hee hath giu'n her ſo good a cauſe to finde her tung, and ſo vniuſtly & deſpitefully prouokt her, ſhee will tell him ſuch a tale in his eare, the next time ſhee meetes him, as ſhall bee worſe than a Northern blaſt to him, and haue a hand-full of his beard (if hee defend not himſelfe the better) for a *maulkin*, or wiſpe, to wye her ſhoes with.

*Import.* *The Gentlewoman hauing taken her Lenuoy or farewell,* Barnabe Barnes *ſteps in with,* An Epistle to the right Worſhipfull his eſpeciall deare Friend, M. *Gabriell Haruey*, Doctör of the Law.

*Reſpo.* It were no booke elſe, if one or other were not drawne in to call him *Right Worſhipfull*: & when hee hath no bodie to help him, he gets one of his Brothers to Epistle it to him, or, in their abſence, faines an Epistle in their names, where his ſtile to the ful ſhalbe ſet in great letters, like a Bill for a houſe to be let: and vpon paine of excommunication, with bell book & candle, none of his Brothers muſt publiſh anie thing, but to his Dottrel-ſhip they muſt frame the like dedication.



Import. *The tenure of that scrimpum scrampum of Barnefes is no more but this, to exhort the sweet Doctōr (as hee names him) to confound those viperous criticall monsters, wheretoo hee is manifestly urged; though he bee fitter / to encounter some more delicate Paranymphe, and honour the Vrany of Du Bartas. Hee hath a Sonet with it, wherein hee inuokes and coniures vp all Romes learned Orators, sweete Grecian Prophets, Philosophers, wisest States-men, reuerend generall Councells, all in one, to behold the Doctors ennobled Arts, as precious stones in gold. At the foote of that (like a right Pupill of the Doctōrs bringing vp) hee inserteth his post-script or correction of his Preamble, with a Counter-sonnet, superscribed Nash, or the confuting Gentleman. In which he besmeares and reuiles thee with all the cutpurse names that is possible, and sayes hee cannot bethinke him of names ill enough, since thou raylest at one, whome Bodine & Sidney did not flatter.*

*Respond.* No more will I flatter him; hee may build vpon it. Thus it is: there was sometimes some prety expectation of this *Patter-wallet & Megiddo*, that now I am a falting and poudring of; and then Sir *Philip Sidney* (as he was a naturall cherisher of men of the least towardnes in anie Artē whatsoeuer) held him in some good regard, and so did most men; & (it may be) some kinde letters hee writ to him, to encourage

and animate him in those his hopefull courses he was entred into: but afterward, when his ambitious pride and vanitie vnmaskt it selfe so egregiously, both in his lookes, his gate, his gestures, and speeches, and hee would do nothing but crake and parret it in Print, in how manie Noble-mens fauours hee was, and blab euerie light speech they vttred to him in priuate, cockering & coying himselfe beyond imagination; then Sir *Philip Sidney* (by little and little) began to looke askance on him, and not to care for him, though vtterly shake him off hee / could not, hee would so fawne & hang vpon him. For M. *Bodines* commendation of him, it is no more but this, one cōplementarie Letter asketh another; & *Gabriell* first writing to him, and seeming to admire him and his workes, hee could doo no lesse in humanitie (beeing a Scholler) but returne him an answere in the like nature. But my yong Master *Barnabe* the bright, and his kindnes (before anie desert at all of mine towards him might plucke it on or prouoke it) I neither haue, nor will bee vnmindfull of.

Import. *Here is another Sonet of his, which hee calls Haruey, or The Sweete Doctour, consisting of Sidney, Bodine, Hatcher, Lewen, Wilson, Spencer; that all their life time haue done nothing but conspire to lawd and honour Poet Gabriell.*

*Respond. Miserum est fuisse fœlicem.* It is a

miserable thing for a man to be said to haue had frends, and now to haue nere a one left.

Import. *What saist thou to the Printers Aduertisement to the Gentleman Reader?*

Respond. I say, ware you breake not your shins in the third line on *preambles* and *postambles*; and that it is not the Printers, but *Harueys*.

Imp. *In it he makes mention of Thorius & Chutes sonets to bee added, prefixed, inserted or annexed at the latter ende.*

Respond. The latter end? but the beginning of the tyde, it may bee, for the flowing.

Import. *As also a third learned French Gentlemans verses, Monsieur Fregeville Gautius, who, both in French and Latine, hath publisht some weightie Treatises.*

Respond. Were they weightie Treatises? the Printers / purse neuer so; but in this respect they might bee tearmd to be weightie, that they were so heauie, they would nere come out of *Poules Church-yard*. I will haue a found list at him anone, for all his Mathematical deuices of his owne inuention, wherewith hee hath acquainted Ma. Doctour *Haruey*, nothing so good as a knife with prickles in the haft, or these Boyes paper-dragons that they let fly with a pack-thrid in the fields.

Import. *His booke.*

*Respond.* Hand off, there is none but I will haue the vnclaspings of that, because I can doo it nimblest. It is deuided into foure parts ; one against mee, the second against M. *Lilly*, the third against *Martinists*, the fourth against D. *Perne*. Neither are these parts feuerally distinguished in his order of handling, but, like a Dutch stewd-pot, iumbled altogether, and linsiey-wolfey wouen one within another. But one of these parts falleth to my share, I being bound to answer for none but my selfe ; yet if I speake a good word now & then for my friends by the way, they haue the more to thanke mee for.

Incipit Caput primum.

*I was neuer vnwilling to undertake anie thing, &c.*

You ly, you ly, *Gabriell*, I know what you are about to saye, but Ile shred you off three leaues at one blowe. You were most willing to vnder-take this controuerfy, for els you would neuer haue first begun it ; you wold neuer haue lyne writing against mee here in *London*, in the verie hart of the Plague, a whole Summer ; or after (through your Friends intreatie) we were reconcilde, popt out your Booke against me. Now say what you will of *being vrgd, loosing of time, impudencie and slander, / & another Table Philo-*

*sophie* that ye fancy ; for there is not a dog vnder the table that will beleue you.

Sa ho : hath *Apuleius* euer an Attorney here ? One *Apuleius* (by the name of *Apuleius*) he endites to be an engrosser of arts and inuentions, putting downe *Plato*, *Hippocrates*, *Aristotle*, and the *Paragraphs* of *Iustinian*. *Non est inuentus* : there's no such man to be found ; let them that haue the Commission for the Cōcealments looke after it, or the Man in the Moone put for it. *Gabriell* casts a vile learing eye at me, as who should saye, he quipt me secretly vnder it, if he durst vtter so much. Also, in that which succeedeth of *One that is a common contemner of God and man, stampes and treads vnder his foote the reuerenest old and new Writers, opposeth himselfe against Vniuersities, Parliaments, and generall Councells, encloseth all within his owne braine, and is a changer, an innouater, a cony-catcher, a rimer, a rayler, that out-faceth heauen and earth.* But soft you now, how is all this or anie part of this to bee prou'd ? make account he will (vpon his oath) denie it. Hath he spoken, printed, written, contriued, or imagined, or caused to bee spoken, written, printed, contriued, or imagined anie thing against these ? or exprest in his countenance the least wincke of dislike of them ? Let some instance of that be produced,

and he be not able to refute it; Ile vndertake for him (which is the most ignominious imposition he can tie himselfe to) he shall giue thee his tung for a rag to wype thy taile with, and haue his right hand cut off for thy mother to hang out for an ale house signe. Cannot a man declaime against a *Catalonian* and a *Hethite*, a *Moabite Gabriell*, and an *Amorite Dicke*, but all the ancient Fathers, all the renoumed / Philosophers, Oratours, Poets, Historiographers, and old & new excellent Writers must bee disparaged and trode vnder foote, God and man contemned and set at nought? Vniuersities, Parliaments, generall Councells oppugned? and he must be another Romane *Palemon*, who vaunted all Science began and ended with him? a changer, an innouater, a cony-catcher, a railer, an out-facer of heauen and earth.

Is there such high treason comprehended vnder calling a foppe a foppe, & cudgelling a curre for his snarling? Or is it thus, our iracundious *Stramutzen Gabriell*, standing much vpon his reading, and that all the Libraries of the auncient Fathers, renoumed Philosophers, Poets, Orators, Historiographers, and olde and new excellent Writers, are hoorded vp in the *Amalthæas* Horne of his braine, with whatfoeuer Constitutions and Decretalls of generall Councells and Parliaments?

and for he hath comment in both Vniuersities, therefore he concludes, He which writes against him must write against them all, & so (*per consequens*) vaunt him about all; and if he vaunts him about them all, he is a *changer, an innouater, an impostor, a railer at all, & confounds heauen and earth*. This is the tydiest Argument he can frame to make his matter good, though it followes no more, than that a man should be helde a traitor, and accused to haue abused the Queene and Counsaile, and the whole State, for calling a fellowe knaue that hath read the Booke of Statutes, since by them all in generall they were made.

Carn. *Thou art vnwise to canuaze it so much, for hee thrust it in but for a Rhetoricall figure of amplification.*

Respond. Rhetoricall figure? and if I had a hundred fennes, / I had rather haue them disfigur'd, & keep them at home as cyphers, than send them to schoole to learn to figure it after that order.

Carnead. *You may haue them worse brought vp, for so you should be sure neuer to haue them counted lyers, since Rhetoricians, though they lye neuer so grosely, are but said to haue a luxurious phrase, to bee eloquent amplifiers, to bee full of their pleasant Hyperboles, or speake by Ironies; and if they*

*raise a slander upon a man of a thing done at home, when hee is a 1000. mile off, it is but Protopopeya, personæ fictio, the supposing or faining of a person: and they will alledge Tully, Demosthenes, Demades, Aeschines, and shew you a whole Talæus & Ad Herennium of figures for it, foure and fiftie times more licentious. These Arithmetique figures are such, like iugling transformers, lying by Addition and Numeration, making frayses and quarrelling by Diuision, getting wenches with childe by Multiplication, stealing by Substraction; and if in these humors they haue conjumd all, and are faine to breake, they doo it by Fraction.*

*Respond.* That last part of Arithmetique (which is Fraction, or breaking,) I intend to teach *Gabriel*; thogh to all the other, as Addition, Deuision, Rebating, or Substraction, of his owne ingrafted disposition hee is apt inough; and so hee is to Multiplication too, hee hauing, since I parted with him last, got him a Gentlewoman.

*Bentiv.* Both thou and hee talke much of that Gentlewoman, but I would we might know her, and see her vnbuskt and naked once, as Paris, in Lucians Dialogues, desires Mercury hee might see the three goddeses naked, that stroue for the golden Ball.

*Carnead.* / The Venus shee is that would win it from them all, if the controuersie were now afloat againe: and, which thou pretermittedst before, hee



*puts her in print for a Venus, yet desires to see her a Venus in print ; publisheth her for a strumpet (for no better was Venus) and yet he would haue her a strumpet more publique.*

*Respond.* By that name had hee not so publisht her, yet his peacocke-pluming her like another *Pandora*, (from Poets too parasiticall commending of whome first grew the name of *Pandare*, though Sir *Philip Sidney* fetcheth it out of *Plautus*) through his incredible praising of her, I say, (wherein one quarter of his Book is spent,) he hath brought all the world into a perfwasion, that shee is as common as Rubarbe among Phisitions; since (as *Thucidides* pronounceth) shee is the honestest woman, of whose praise, or dispraise, is least spoken. My pen, he prodigally insulteth, shee shall pumpe to as drie a sponge as anie is in Hosier Lane, and wring our braines like emptie purses. *Idem per idem* in sense he speakes, though it be not his comparifon, and, *Tamburlain*-like, hee braues it indefinitely in her behalfe, setting vp bills, like a Bear-ward or Fencer, what fights we shall haue, and what weapons she will meete me at.

*Con.* *Fafilia*, the daughter of *Pelagius*, King of Spain, was torne in peices by a Beare; & so I hope thou wilt tear her and tug with her, if she begin once to playe the Deuill of Dowgate: but as there was a woman in Roome, that had her childe slaine

*with thunder and lightning in her wombe ere ſhe was deliuerd, ſo it is like inough hers will bee, and proue an Embrion, and we ſhall neuer ſee it : or if wee doo, looke for another armed Pallas iſſuing out of Ioues braine, or an Amazonian Hippolite, that will bee good / inough for Theſeus ; or the female of the Aſpis, who (if her mate be kild by any paſſenger in the way) thorough fire, thorough the thickeſt aſſembly ſhe will purſue him, or aniething but water.*

*Bentiv. In ſome Countreys no woman is ſo honorable as ſhe that hath had to doo with moſt men, and can giue the luſtieſt ſtriker oddes by 25 times in one night, as Meſſalina did ; and ſo it is with this his bratche, or bitch-foxe.*

*Confil. Agelaſtus, Grand-father to Craſſus, neuer laught but once in his life, and that was to ſee a mare eate thiſtles ; ſo this will be a ieſt to make one laugh that lyes a dying, to ſee a Gillian draggell taile run her taile into a buſhe of thornes, becauſe her nailes are not long inough to ſcratch it, and play at waſters with a quil for the britches.*

*Carm. Multi illum iuuenes multæ petiere puellæ, Boyes, wenches, and euerie one purſue him for his beauty.*

*Non caret effectū, quod voluere duo,*

*Thou canſt neuer hold out, if thou wert Hercules, if two to one encounter thee.*

*Respo. Quis nisi mentis inops teneræ declamat amicæ.* Who but an ingram coffet would keepe such a courting of a Curtezan, to haue her combat for him ; or doo as *Dick Haruey* did, (which information piping hot in the midst of this line was but brought to mee) that, hauing preacht and beat downe three pulpits in inueighing against dauncing ; one Sunday euening, when hys Wench, or Friskin, was footing it aloft on the Greene, with foote out and foote in, and as busie as might be at *Rogero, Basolino, Turkelony, All the flowers of the broom, Pepper is black, Greene sleeues, Peggie Ramsay*, he came sneaking behinde a tree and lookt on, and though hee was loth to be seene to countenance the sport, hauing laid / Gods word against it so dreadfully, yet to shew his good-will to it in hart, hee sent her 18. pence, in hugger mugger, to pay the fiddlers : let it sink into ye, for it is true & will be verefide. Let *Gabriel* verefie anie one thing so against mee, and not thinke to carrie it away with hys *generall extenuatings, ironically amplifications, and declamatorie exclamations.* Nor let him muckehill vp so manie pages in saying he lookt for *termes of aqua fortis, and gunpowder*, and that *I haue thundred and giu'n out tragically, when nought appeares but the sword of cats-meate, and the fire-brand of dogs-meate*, and, *Aut nunc aut nunquam*, and *two staues and a pike* : but let him shew what

part of that his first Booke I haue not, from the crowne to the little toe, confuted, and laid as open as a custard, or a cowheard; and if my Booke bee *cats-meate and dogs-meate*, his is much worse, since on hys mine hath his whole foundation and dependance, and I doo but paraphrase vpon his text. Something that he grounds this *cats-meate and dogs-meate* on, I will not with-stand but I haue lent him; as in my Epistle to *Apis lapis*, where I wish him *to let Chaucer be new scowrd against the day of battaile, and Terence but come in now and then with the snuffe of a sentence and Dictum puta, wee'l strike it as dead as a doore-naile*, Haud teruntii estimo, *we haue cats-meate & dogs-meate inough for these mungrels*. Hence, as if I had continually harpt vppon it, in euerie tenth line of my Book he saith, I do nothing but assaile him with *cats-meat & dogs-meat*, when there is not anie more spoken of it than I haue shewd you. So, *Aut nunc aut nunquam* he brings in for a murdring shot, beeing neuer my posie, but, *Aut nunquam tentes, aut perfice*, at the latter end of my *Foure Letters*; spea/king to him, that he shuld not go about to answere me, except he set it soundly on; for otherwise, with a sound counterbuffe I would make his eares ring againe, and haue at him with two staues & a pike, which was a kinde of old verse, in request before

he fell a rayling at *Turbervile* or *Elderton*. Some *Licoftthenes* reading (which shoves plodding & no wit) he hath giu'n a twinckling glimps of, & like a school-boy faid ouer his gear to his vnckles & kinsfolk, and tels what Authours he hath read, when he floted in the sea of encounters; which, for ought he hath alleadgd out of them, he may haue stolne by the whole sale out of *Ascanius*, or *Andrew Maunsells* English Catalogue. No villaine, no Atheist, no murdrer, no traitor, no Sodomite, hee euer read of but he hath likend mee too, or in a superlatiue degree made me a monster beyond him, for no other reason in the earth, but because I would not let him go beyond me, or be won to put my finger in my mouth, & crie mumbudget, when he had baffuld mee in print throughout *England*. The victorioust Captaines and Warriours, the inuinciblest *Cæsars* and Conquerours, the satyricallest confuters, and *Luthers* (like whom the *Germanes* affirme neuer anie in their tung writ so forcible) in an Alphabet he trowles vp, and sayes I out-strip them all, I set them all too schoole. The *quorsum*, or *quare*, if you demaund, is this, I haue outftript and set him to schoole, and he is sure he is a better man than anie of them. The verie guts and garbage of his Note-book he hath put into this tallow loafe, & not left anie Frezeland, Dutch, or Almain

scribe (where they Commence, and doo their Actes, with writing Bookes) that hath but squibd foorth a Latin *Puerilis* in Print, or fet / his name to a Catechisme, vncōpared or vnscoard. A true Pellican he is, that peirceth his breast & lets out all his bowels to giue life to his yong. No Author but himselfe and *Nashe* hereafter he can cyte, which hee hath not stellified worse than *Sapiēs dominabitur astris*, the ordinarie Posie for all Almanackes, or the presenting of *Artaxerxes* with a cup of water, vsde in euerie Epistle Dedicatorie; and those two hee hath wrought reasonably vpon, hauing worne the first (which is himselfe) naplesse, & the other owes him nothing. Against blasphemous *Seruetus*, or *Muretus*, or *Sunius*, that haue been so bold with her Maiestie and this State, was thys Inuectiue of his first armd and aduanced; which (vppon the missing his preferment, or aduauncement, in Court) he supprest, and in the bottom of a rustie hamper let it lye asleepe by him (euen as he did the Aduertisement against *Paphatchet* & *Martin*, which he hath yoakt with it, by his own date, euer since 89.) and now, with putting in new names here and there of *Nashe* & *Piers Pennileffe*, he hath so pannyerd and drest it that it seemes a new thing, though there be no new thing in it that claimes anie kindred of mee, more than a dozen

of famisht quips, but like a lose French cassock, or gabberdine, would fit any man. Those more appropriate blowes ouer the thumbe are these. *My praising of Aretine*; so did he before me, the verie words whereof I haue set downe in my other Booke: *my excepting against his Doctorship*; better Doctors than euer he wil be put it in my head, and if therein I misreport, I erre by authoritie. *My calling him a fawne-guest messenger betwixt M. Bird and M. Demetrius, in the companie of one of which he neuer din'd nor sup't this 6 yeres; & for the / other he neuer drunke with to this day*: he may be a fawn-guest in his intent neuertheles, and if he neither eate nor drunck at M. Demetrius, why did he so familiarly write to him, *M. Demetrius in your absence I found your wife verie curteous*? For a great trespasse he layes it to me, in that *I haue praised her Maiesties affabilitie towards s[c]hollers, and attributed to Noble-men so much pollicy & wisdome as to haue a priuy watch word in their praises, and crossing his sleight opinion of Inuectiues and Satyres*. Like Sophisticall Disputers that onely rehearse, not answere, he runs on telling how *I haue fatherd on him a new part of Tully, which he fetcht out of a wall at Barnwell, euen as Poggius in an old Monasterie found out a new Part of Quintillian, after it had bin manie hundred yeres lost*; my taking vpon me to be

Greenes *aduocate*, my *threatning* so incessantly to haunt the *Ciivilian* and the *Deuine*, that to auoid the hot chase of my *ferie quill*, they shall be constrained to *enskonse* themselues in one of their *Phisition Brothers* old *urinall cases*; my calling him *butter-whore*, & bidding him, *Rip, rip, you kitchin-stufte wrangler*; my accusing him of *carterly derisions* and *milk-maids girds*, as, *Good beare bite not, A man's a man thogh he hath but a hose on his head. Pulchre mehercule dictum, sapienter, lautè, lepidè, nil suprà*, nothing so good as the *iests* of the *Councell Table* affe, *Richard Clarke*.

*Carnead*. Yes, that he doth more than rehearse, for he maintains them to be the *Ironies* of *Socrates*, *Aristophanes*, *Epicharmus*, *Lucian*, *Tully*, *Quintillian*, *Sanazarius*, *K. Alphonfus*, *Cardan*, *Sir Th. Moore*, *Isocrates*: looke the first 156 Page of his *Booke*, & ye shal finde it so.

*Bentiv*. What, had they no better *iests* than *Good beare bite not*, or *A man is a man though he hath but a hose / on his head*: *Pulchre mehercule dictum*? O, dishonor to the house from whence they come!

*Resp*. Hee chargeth mee, to haue derided and abused the most *valorous Mathematicall Arts*; let him shewe mee wherein, and I will answere: of *palpable Atheisme* he condemnes me, for drinking a cup of *lambswool* to the health of his *Brothers*



*Booke, cald The Lamb of God & his Enemies :* then, what Atheists are they that turne it to wast paper, and goe to the priuy with it? as to no other vses it is conuerted, it lying dead and neuer felling : and againe with the *Atheist* he spurgals mee, in that *I iested at heauen, calling it the hauen where his deceased Brother is arriued.*

Carnead. *Is it a iest that his brother is arriu'd in heauen ? he is in hell then belike.*

Confil. *A more likelier piece of Atheisme thou maiest urge against him, where he saith in one leafe that one acre of performance is worth twentie of the Land of Promise ; as though God had not performed to the Children of Israel the Land of Promise he vowd to them.*

*Resp.* The deepe cut out of my grammer Rules, *Astra petit disertus*, he hits me with : I am sorry for it I slanderd him so, for he was neuer eloquent ; if he bee not aboue the starres, I would hee were. Hee complaines *I doo not regard M. Bird, M. Spencer, Mounseieur Bodin.* In any thing but in praising him, and therin as *Aristotle non vidit verum in spiritualibus*, nor *Barnard* all things ; so they may haue theyr eyes dazeled. To a bead-roll of learned men and Lords hee appeales, *whether he be an Asse or no*, in the forefront of whom he puts *M. Thomas Watson*, the Poet. A man he was that I dearely lou'd and honor'd,

and for all / things hath left few his equalls in *England* : he it was that, in the company of diuers Gentlemen one night at supper at the Nags head in *Cheape* ; first told me of his vanitie, and those Hexameters made of him,

*But o what newes of that good Gabriell Haruey,  
Knowne to the world for a foole and clapt in the  
Fleet for a Rimer ?*

For the other graue men, they all speak as their fore-man. *His imprisonment in the Fleete, he affirmes, is a lewd supposall* (the Hexameter vearse before prooues it) as also his writing *the welwillers Epistle* in praise of himselfe, before his first *four Letters* a yeare ago. The Compositor that set it, fwore to mee it came vnder his owne hand to bee printed. *Hee bids the world examine the Preamble before the Supplication to the Diuell, and see if I doo not praise my selfe, and that the tenour of the stile, & identity of the phrase proues it to be mine.* He needed not go so far about to sent me out by my *stile* and my *phrase*, for if he had euer ouerlookt it he would haue seene my name to it, and besides, another argument that he neuer read it is (which whosoeuer shal peruse it wil finde) it is altogether in my owne dispraise and disabling, and grieuing at the imperfect printing and misinterpreting of it : let him shewe mee but one tittle or

letter in it tending to any other drift. *He vpbraides me by the poore fellow my Fathers putting me to my scribling shifts, and how I am beholding to the Printing-house for my poore shifts of appaile :* My Father put more good meate in poore mens mouthes, than all the ropes and liuing is worth his Father left him, together with his mother and two brothers ; and (as another Scholler) he brought me vp at *S. Iohns*, where (it / is well knowen) I might haue been Fellow if I had would : and for deriuing my maintenaunce from the Printing-house, so doo both vniuersities, and whofoeuer they be that come vp by learning, out of Printed Bookes gathering all they haue ; and would not haue furre to put in their gownes, if it, or writing were not. But if hee meane that from writing to the Presse, I scrape vp my exhibition, let him scrape it out for a lye, till the Impression of this Book, I hauing got nothing by Printing these three yeres. But when I doo play my prizes in Print, Ile be paid for my paines that's once ; & not make my selfe a gazing stocke and a publique spectacle to all the world for nothing, as he does, that giues money to be seene and haue his wit lookt vpon, neuer Printing booke yet for whose Impression he hath not either paid or run in debt. Printers (aboue all the rest) haue nothing to thanke him for, in his *Praise of*

*the Affe*, he putting in *the Presse* for the arrantest *Affe of all*, because it is such a meanes to presse him to death, and confound him. *Danters Presse* sweares after three *Forme* a day, since he hath giuen it the presse and disgrac't them it will (howeuer others neglect it) neuer haue

Printers beating  
with inke  
balles.

done "beating vppon him"; nor hath it acquitted him for calling me *Danters gentleman*, who is as good at all times as *Wolfe's right worshipfull Gabriell*, or the gentleman he brings in reading a chapter (*Colledge* fashion at dinner time) against *Piers* & his proceedings, and the approbation of his *Docterly* reincounter. Applaud and partake with him who list, this is my definitiue position; which *Anaxandrides*, a Comick Poet, said of the Aegyptian superstition, *Maximam Anguillam, quam Deum putant, comedo; canem quem colunt verbero:* / they worship the great Eele for a God, which I eate or digest; and the Dog they adore, I spurne or driue out of dores. *Hidras* heads I should go about to cut off, (as *Tacitus* saies of them that thinke to cut off all discomforties or inconueniences from the Lawes) if I should vndertake to run throghout all the foolish friuolous reprehensions & cauils he hath in his Booke. I will take no knowledge of his tale of ten eggs for a penny, and nine of them rotten; a gormandizing breakfast, he saies, *I was at of eggs*

and butter ; which if he can name, where, when, or with whom, I will giue him an annuities of eggyes. No more will I of his calling me *Captaine of the boyes*, and *Sir Kil-prick* ; which is a name fitter for his *Piggen de wiggen*, or gentlewoman : or els, because she is such a hony sweetikin, let her bee *Prick-madam*, of which name there is a flower ; & let him take it to himselfe, and raighe intire *Cod-pisse Kinks*, and *Sir Muredred* of placards, *durante bene placito*, as long as he is able to please, or giue them geare. Like-wise the Captainship of the boyes I tosse backe to him, he hauing a whole band of them to write in his praise : but if so he terme me in respect of the minoritie of my beard, he hath a beard like a Crow, with two or three durtie strawes in her mouth, going to build her neast. See him & see him not I will, about that meazild inuention of *the Good-wife my mothers finding her daughter in the ouen, where she would neuer haue sought her, if she had not been there first her selfe* : (a hackny prouerb in mens mouths euer since *K. Lud* was a little boy, or *Belinus, Brennus* brother, for the loue hee bare to oysters built *Billin'gate*) : therefore there is no more to be said to it, but if he could haue told how to haue made a bet/ter lye he would. I wil not present into the Arches, or Commissaries Court, what *prinkum prankums* Gentlemen (his nere neighbors) haue

whispred to me of his Sister, and how shee is as good a fellow as euer turnd belly to belly ; for which she is not to be blam'd, but I rather pitie her, and thinke she cannot doo withall, hauing no other dowrie to marie her. Good Lord, how one thing brings on another ; had it not bin for his baudy sifter, I should haue forgot to haue answerd for the *baudie rymes* he threapes vpon me. Are they *rimes*? and are they *baudie*? and are they *mine*? Well, it may be so that it is not so ; or if it be, men in their youth (as in their sleep) manie times doo something that might haue been better done, & they do not wel remember.

O Yes. Be it knowen vnto all men by these presents, that whatsoeuer names of *Duns, asse*, or *Dorbell* I haue giu'n *Gabriell Haruey*, or of a *kitchin stuffe wrangler*, and *reading the Lecture of Ram alley*, I will still perseuer and insist in ; as also, that I wilbe as good as my word in defending any (but abhominable Atheists) that shall write against him, that I wil still maintaine *there is in court but one true Diana*, & so wil all that are true subiects to her Maiestie ; that I think as reuerently of *London* as of any Citie in *Europe*, though I doo not cal it the "*Madam Towne of the Realme*," as he hath done, and that I hold no place

He might as  
well haue cald  
it the Count-  
esse or Duches  
Towne.

better gouerned, how euer in so great a sea of all waters there cannot chuse but be some quick-sands and rockes & shelues; that I neuer so much as in thought detracted from *Du Bartas*, *Buchanan*, or anie generall allowed moderne Writer, howere *Gnimelfe Hengist* here giues out, without / naming time, place, or to whome I did, how *I vowd to confute them all*; that Ma<sup>st</sup>. Lilly neuer procur'd Greene or mee to write against him, but it was his own first seeking and beginning in *The Lamb of God*, where he and his Brother (that loues dauncing so wel) scummerd out betwixt them an *Epistle to the Readers* against all Poets and Writers; & M. Lilly & me by name he be-ruffianizd & be-rascald, cōpar'd to *Martin*, & termd vs *piperly make-plaies and make-bates*, yet bad vs holde our peace & not be so hardie as to answere him, for if we did, he would make a bloodie day in Poules Church-yard, & splinter our pens, til they straddled again as wide as a paire of Compasses. Further be it knowen vnto you, that before this I praisde him (after a fort) in an *Epistle* in Greenes Menaphon.

Bentiv. But didst thou so?

Respon. O what do you meane to hinder my Proclamation? I did, I did, as vnfainedly and sincerely as, in his first butter-fly Pamphlet against

*Greene*, he praisd me for *that proper yong man*, *Greenes fellow Writer*, whom (in some respects) *he wisht well to*; as also in hys Booke he writ against *Greene* and mee, he raild vppon me vnder the name of *Piers Pennileffe*, and for a bribe that I should not reply on him praisd me, and reckond me (at the latter end) amongst the famous Schollers of our time, as *S. Philip Sidney*, *M. Watson*, *M. Spencer*, *M. Daniell*, whom he hartily thankd, & promised to endow with manie complements for so enriching our *English Tongue*.

Confil. Then, what an *Asse* is hee to call thee an *Asse* for praising him, & after thou hadst praisd him (though it was but pretie and so, for a *Latine Poet* after others) vpon / a good turn done him (& no iniurie fore-running) to build the foundation of a quarrell.

Resp. Further than further bee it knowne (since I had one further before) I neuer abusd *Marloe*, *Greene*, *Chettle* in my life, nor anie of my frends that vsde me like a frend; which both *Marloe* and *Greene* (if they were aliue) vnder their hands would testifie, euen as *Harry Chettle* hath in a short note here.

*I Hold it no good manners* (*M. Nashe*), *beeing but an Artificer*, to giue *D. Haruey* the ly, though he haue deseru'd it, by publishing in Print you



*haue done mee wrong, which priuately I neuer found : yet to confirme by my Art in deed, what his calling forbids me to affirme in word, your booke being readie for the Presse, Ile square & set it out in Pages, that shall page and lackey his infamie after him (at least) while he liues if no longer.*

Your old Compositer,  
*Henry Chettle.*

*Impo.* Yes, Greene he conuinces thee to haue abused, in that thy defence of him is a more biting commendation than his reproofe.

*Respond.* It is so hereticall a falsifier, a man had not need talke with him without a Bible in the roome ; for it may be he hath some care of his oath, if it be not in a matter of reconciliation, or repaying of money, as to *Dexters* man : but his *ipse dixit*, his report otherwise, is nothing so currant as beggars about the Courts remoue. Nere tell me of this or that he sayes I spake or did, except he particularize and stake downe the verie words, and, catching them by the throate like a theefe, say, / these are they that did the deed, I arrest you, and I charge you all, gentle Readers, to aid me. What truly might be spoken of *Greene*, I publiht, neither discommending him, nor too much flattering him (for I was nothing bound to him); whereas it maye be alleadgd

againſt *Gabriel*, as it was againſt *Paulus Iouius*, *Quæ veriffime ſcribere potuit noluit, & quæ voluit non potuit*: thoſe things which hee might haue related truly hee would not, and thoſe which he would hee could not, for want of good intelligence. How he hath handled *Greene and Marloe*, ſince their deaths, thoſe that read his Bookes may iudge: and where, like a iakes barreller and a *Gorbolone*, he girds me *with imitating of Greene*, let him vnderſtand, I more ſcorne it, than to haue ſo foule a iakes for my groaning ſtoole as hys mouth; & none that euer had but one eye, with a pearle in it, but could diſcern the difference twixt him & me; while he liu'd (as ſome Stationers can witneſſe with me) hee ſubſcribing to me in anie thing but plotting Plaies, wherein he was his crafts maſter. Did I euer write of Conycatching? ſtufft my ſtile with hearbs & ſtones? or apprentiſd my ſelfe to running of the letter? If not, how then doo I imitate him? A hang-by of his (one *Valentine Bird*, that writ againſt *Greene*) imitated me, & would embezill out of my *Piers Pennileſſe* fixe lines at a clap, and vſe them for his owne. Nay, he himſelfe hath purloyned ſomething from mee, and mended his hand in confuting by fifteen parts, by following my preſidents. There is two or three mouth fulls of my *Oo yes* yet behinde, which, after I

haue drawne out at length, you shall seeme (like a Crier, that when he hath done kire-clofoning it, puts of his cap, and cries God faue the Queene, / & so steps into the next ale-house) steale out of your companie before you bee aware, and hide my selfe in a Clofet, no bigger than would holde a Church Bible, till the beginning of *Candlemas Terme*, and then, if you come into *Poules Church-yard*, you shall meete mee.

Oo yes, be it knowne, I can ryme as wel as the Doctor, for a fample whereof, in stead of his

*Noddy Nash*, whom euerie *swash*, and his *occasionall admonitionatiue Sonnet*, his *Apostrophe Sonnet*, and tynie titmouse *Lenuoy*, like a welt at the edge of a garment, his goggle-eyde *Sonnet of Gorgon*, and the *wonderfull yeare*, and another *Lenuoy*, for the chape of it, his *Stanza declaratiue*, *Writers post-script in meeter*, his *knitting vp Cloase*, and a *third Lenuoy*, like a fart after a good stoole ; In stead of all these (I say) here is the tufft or labell of a rime or two, the trick or habit of which I got by looking on a red nose Ballet-maker that resorted to our Printing-house. They are to the tune of *Labore Dolore*, or the Parliament tune of a pot of ale and nutmegs and ginger, or *Eldertons* ancient note of *meeting the diuell in coniure house lane*. If you hit it right, it will go maruellously sweetly :

*Gabriel Haruey, fames duckling,  
 hey noddie, noddie, noddie :  
 Is made a gosling and a suckling,  
 hey noddie, noddie, noddie.*

Or that's not it, I haue a better.

*Dilla, my Doct̃or deare,  
 sing dilla, dilla, dilla :  
 Nafhe hath spoyled thee cleare  
 with his quilla, quilla, quilla.*

What / more haue I in my Proclamation to yalp out? No more but this, that in both my bookes I haue obiected some perticular vice more against him than *pumps and pantoffes*, which those that haue not faith inough to beleue, may toote & superuize when they haue any literall idle leysure. *The Tragedie of wrath*, or *Priscianus vapulans*, promised in the epilogue Sonnet of my *Foure Letters*, (three or foure words wherof, as *Awayte*, and *paint*, and *tread no common path*, he mumbles and chews in his mouth like a peece of Allom, or the stone of a horse plum, to sucke off all the meate of it) let him take this for it, whereby I am out of his debt, if not ouer-plus. And where he terrefies mee with insulting *hee was Tom Burwels the Fencers Scholler*, and *that he will squeeze and mazer me whensoever he met me*, why did hee not when hee met me at *Cambridge*, we lying

backe to backe in the same Inne, and but two or three square trenchours of a wainscot dore betwixt vs? By our reconciliation he cannot excuse it, since the law-day was out, and the feude open againe by his breach of truce, and my defiance to him in an Epistle to the Reader in *Christs tears*. But let him henceforth prouide him of two or three sturdie Plow men (such as his swines fac't blue-coate was) when I legerd by him in the *Dolphin*, for otherwise not all the fence he learnd of *Tom Burwell* shall keepe mee from cramming a turd in his iawes (and no other bloud will I draw of him): I haue bespoken a boy and a napkin already to carry it in. Last of all, *there is nothing I haue bragd of my writing in all humors*, no not so much as of his fleshly humours, but shall be anuilde for true steele on his standish, I making an indenture twixt God and my / foule, to consume my bodie as slender as a stilt or a broome-staffe; and my braine as poore and compendius as the pummell of a scotch faddle, or pan of a *Tobacco* pipe, but as the Elephant and the Rinoceros neuer fight but about the best pastures, so will I winne from him his best Patrons, and driue him to confesse himselfe a *Conundrum*, who now thinks he hath learning inough to prooue the saluation of *Lucifer*; Apologize it for him as many

*Chutes, Barneses, or vile friggers, or Fregeuiles, as there will.*

*Bentiv. Thou promisedst to haue a dead list at that Fregeuile.*

*Resp. I, here I am come to his verses, but let mee take them in order as they lie; Thorius is first, with a Letter and Sonnet, and Post-script of Chutes.*

*Carnead. More Post-scripts and preambles: hath he (as with his Thrafonisme) infected them all with his methode of Lenuoyes, Post-scripts and Preambles.*

*Respond. From Master Thorius I haue a letter vnder his owne hand, which he sent mee to be printed, vtterly disclaiming the wrong which the Doctour (vnder his name) hath thrust out against mee. This is the counterpaine of it.*

To my very good friend M. Nashe.

*Master Nashe: I pray you to let my carriage towards you alwaies, beget but thus much in your opinion, that I would neuer haue beene led with so much indiscretion as to raile against any man unprouoked, or to offer him / wrong that neuer offended mee. Truly, vpon the sight of fve or six sheets of Doctor Harueyes Booke, I wrote certaine verses in his commendation; but that Sonnet which in his booke is subscribed with my name, is not mine, and I*

geſſe at the miſtaking of it. Indeed the Stanzaes are, though alſo to your diſgrace in ſome places. To uſe many words were vaine, and to ende writing and leaue you vnſatisfied, were to write to no end, and to leaue my ſelfe diſcontented. But if you conſider how I was as much offended with the vniuſt vaine-glorious Print as your ſelfe, wee ſhall both reſt contented. Little did I think the booke ſhould haue had ſo famous a Title, or ſo many Prefaces, or ſo many Letters and Preambles; amongſt which ſome of mine, bluſhing to looke vppon ſo contemptible a perſon they were directed too, could not but be exceedingly aſhamed to bee preſented to the eyes of a whole world. I could miſlike other things, but I will leaue them as trifles. Farewell.

Yours to vſe,

I. Thorius.

Chute, / that was the bawlingeſt of them all, & that bobd me with nothing but *Rheniſh furie*, *Stilliard clyme*, *oyſter whore phraſe*, *claret ſpirit*, and *ale-houſe paſſions*, with talking ſo much of drinke, within a yere and a halfe after died of the dropſie, as diuers Printers that were at his buriall certefide mee. Beeing dead, I would not haue reuiu'd him, but that the Doctour (whoſe patron he was) is alieue to anſwere for him. *Mounſieur Freguſius*, or *Mounſieur Fregeville Gautius*, that

prating weazell fac'd vermin, is one of the Pipers in this confort, and he is at it with his *Apologie of the thrice learned and thrice eloquent Doctour Haruey, befooles and befots mee* in euerie line, pleads the *Doctours innocence, and the lawfulness of his proceedings*, praiseth his moderate stile, saies he is *sorie he is so vniustly pusht at, and, being pusht at, glad he hath so acquitted him*, and that his *Answer* is *reasonable and eloquent*.

I am sorie I haue no more roome to reason the matter with him ; for if I had, I did not doubt but to make him a fugitiue out of *England* as well as he is out of his owne Countrey : & in this great dearth in *England* we haue no reason but to make him a Fugitiue or banish him, since he is the rauenuousst flouen that euer lapt porredge ; and out of two Noblemens houfes he had his *Mittimus* of ye may be gone, for he was such a peruerse *Ramisticall* heretike, a busie reprouer of the principles of all Arts, and fower of feditious Paradoxes amongst kitchen boyes.

My clue is spun, the Tearme is at an end, wherefore here I wil end and make Vacation : but if you wil haue a word or two of Doctour *Perne* and Master *Lilly*, in stead of one of *Gabriels* *Apotrophe Sonnets* or *Lenuqyes* / by *Struthio Belliuecento de Compasso Callipero*, and the Contents of it, I protest and adiure, you shall.



Against Doctor *Perne* our *Poditheck*, or *Tolmach*, hath in his booke twilted and sticht in a whole penny-worth of paper, which his Gossipship, that had the naming of the child, dubs *the Encomium of the Foxe*. In it he endorfeth him *the puling Preacher of Pax vobis & humilitie*, (to both of which *Gabriell* alwaies was an enemie, euen as Doctor *Perne* was to his loue-lockes & his great ruffes and pantofles) *the triangle turne-coate*, (I wold he had anie coat to turne but that he weares :) and for triangles, one angle or corner he wilbe glad of to hide him in after this Booke is out, & brickil & ouen vp his stinking breath, (which smells like the greasie snafe of a candle) that I maye not come within eleuen-teene score nose length of it. *He brings in his coffin to speake* : what a wooden iest is that? *An apostata, an hipocryte, a Machauill, a coufner, a iugler, a letcher hee makes him*, and saies *he kept a Cubbe at Peter-house* ; that *his hospitalitie was like Ember weeke or good Friday* : & if a man should haue writ against *Sergius*, that was the first setter vp of *Mahomet*, he could not haue parbraked more vilenes, than he hath done against him. *Vincit qui patitur* he saith (or a great Counfeller that giues that Posie) *can vnrip the whole packet of his knauerie*, making him a broker to his scutcherie. The whole Quire thanks you hartily. Doctor

*Perne* is caskt vp in lead, and cannot arise to plead for himselfe: wherefore this (as dutie to those some way bindes mee that were somewhat bound to him) I wil commit to inke & paper in his behalfe. Few men liu'd better, though, like *David* / or *Peter*, he had his falls, yet the Vniuersitie had not a more carefull Father this 100 yere, and if no regard but that a chiefe Father of our Commonwealth lou'd him, (in whose house he died) hee might haue spar'd and forborne him.

His *hospitalitie* was as great as hath bin kept before, or euer since, vpon the place he had, and for his wit & learning, they that mislike want the like wit and learning, or else they would haue more iudgement to discerne of it. For Master *Lillie* (who is halues with me in this indignitie that is offred) I will not take the tale out of his mouth, for he is better able to defend himselfe than I am able to say he is able to defend himselfe, and in as much time as hee spendes in taking *Tobacco* one weeke, he can compile that which would make *Gabriell* repent himselfe all his life after. With a blacke fant he meanes shortly to bee at his chamber window, for calling him *the Fiddlestick of Oxford*. In that he twatleth, *it had bin better to haue confuted Martin by Reuerend Cooper* than such leuitie; tell mee why was hee not then confuted by Reuerend *Cooper*, or made

to hold his peace, till Master *Lillie*, and some others, with their pens drew vpon him? A day after the faire when he is hangd *Haruey* takes him in hand, but if he had beene aliue now, euen as he writ *more worke for the Cooper*, so would hee haue writte *Harueys whoope diddle, or the non-futing, or vncafing of the animadvertiser*. I haue a laughing hickocke to heare him faye, *hee was once suspected for Martin*, when there is nere a Pursuant in England, in the pulling on his boots, euer thought of him or imputed to him so much wit. The bangingest thinges which I can picke / out, wherein he hath festered *Martin*, or defended bishops, are these: *For a polished stile few goe beyond Cartwright; his rayling at mee, for speaking against Beza, the grand Champion against Bishops; his malicious defamation of Doctour Perne; where, after hee hath polluted him with all the scandale hee could, hee saies, The clergie neuer wanted excellent fortune-wrights, and he was one of the cheefest; as though the Church of England were vpheld and Atlassed by corruption, Machauelisme, apostatisme, hipocrysie and treacherie: in all these hee, making him notorious in the highest kinde, dooth giue out, that he was one of the Churches cheife fortune-wrights: and besides (to mend the matter) he asks, What Bishop or Politician in England was so great a Temporiser as hee?* I hope

there be some Bishops within the compasse of the two Metropolitaine Seas, that can fish out a shamefull meaning out of this word *Temporiser*, and doo disdaine their high calling should be so Gnathonically compar'd, for such is a *Temporiser*; and with their profession it stands to bee no state Politicians, but onely to meddle with the state of heauen. Then he hath a tale out of *Pontane* against *Bishops*, for *their riding vpon horses, & not asses as Christ did*: aswel he might restrain them to ride vpon mares, as *John Bale* saith our English Bishops wer limited too heretofore. Such another tale of a Horse hee hath of *Gelo*, a Tyrant of *Sicily*, whom he termes *the politique Tyrant*, for bringing in his great horse, instead of a harper, into his Banquetting-house; to dung and stale amongst his guests. It is a stale stinking Apotheg; but *Benè olet hostis interfectus* (as *Vitellius* said); the sweete sauer of an enemie flaine takes away the smell of it.

*More battring engins I had in a readines prepared to shake his walles, which I keepe backe till the next Tearme, meaning to insert them in my Foure Letters Confuted, which then is to be renewed and reprinted againe.*

*So be your leaue God be with you, I was bold to call in, Spectatores. The faults escaped in the Printing I wish may likewise escape you in reading.*

*In the Epistle Dedicatorie correct Willington, and put in Williamfon : in the midst of the Booke vide make vidi: about the latter end stellified stalized, and Sunius Surius: with as many other words, or letters to much, or too-wanting, as ye will.*

*The Paradoxe of the Asse, M. Lilly hath wrought vppon ; as also to him I turne ouer the Doctōrs Apothecarie tearmes he hath vsed throughout, & more especially in his last Epistle of notable Contents.*

*Herewith the Court breakes vp and goes to dinner, all generally concluding with Traian ; The Gods neuer suffer anie to be ouer-come in battail, but those that are enemies to peace.*

*Tu mihi criminis*

*Author.*

FINIS.







X.

THE  
TERRORS OF THE NIGHT.

1594.



#### NOTE.

For the exemplar of 'The Terrors of the Night' I am indebted to the Bodleian.—G.





THE  
Terrors of the night,  
Or  
A Discourse of Apparitions.

*Post Tenebras Dies.*

THO : NASHE.



LONDON,  
Printed by *John Danter* for *William Jones*, and are to be fold  
at the signe of the Gunne, nere Holburne Conduit.

1594.





## TO THE NEW KIND-

led cleare Lampe of Virginitie, and  
the excellent adored high Wonder of sharpe Wit  
and sweete Beautie, Mistres ELIZABETH CAREY;  
*sole Daughter and Heire to the thrice noble and re-  
nowmed Sir GEORGE CAREY, Knight  
Marshall, &c.*

**R**Are adorned Mistris, whom al that know  
admire, and not malice it selfe but doth  
honor. True Stemme of Nobilitie, out-  
flourishing your sexe or your age; pure saint-like  
picture of Sobrietie and Modestie, sacred and im-  
maculate virgin Starre, cleare (if anie liuing) from  
the originall sin of thought: giue me leaue (though  
contemptible and abiect) once more to sacrifice my  
worthles wit to your glorie. Manie feruent voves  
and protestations of obseruance, your bountifull  
gracious deserts towards mee, haue entrancedly  
extracted, which yet remain in the o're vnwrought  
and vntride. As touching this short glose or an-  
notation on the foolish Terrors of the Night, you  
partly are acquainted, from whose motiue imposition

it first proceeded, as also what strange sodaine cause necessarily produced that motion. A long time since hath it bine suppressed by mee; vntill the vrgent importunitie of a kinde frend of mine (to whom I was fundrie waies beholding) / wrested a Coppie from me. That Coppie progresed from one scriueners shop to another, & at length grew so common, that it was readie to bee hung out for one of their signes, like a paire of indentures. Wherevppon I thought it as good for mee to reape the frute of my owne labours, as to let some vnskilfull pen-man or Nouerint-maker startch his ruffe & new spade his beard with the benefite he made of them. Accept of them, exquisite Mistris, as the best testimonie I haue yet to expres the dutie that I owe. A little more leasure and prosperitie, will beget better labors; wherein I will enioyne my spirit to be a peremptorie combattant for your praises, against all vulgar deepe flattred mediocritie, and pale penurious beautie, which giues dull Painters store of gold to solder vp their leane dints of deformity. Against your perfections no tung can except. Miraculous is your wit; and so is acknowledged by the wittiest Poets of our age, who haue vowed to enshrine you as their second DELIA. Temperance her selfe hath not temperater behauiour than you; religious Pietie hath no humble hand-maide that she more delights in. A

worthy Daughter are you of so worthie a Mother ; borrowing (as another *Phæbe*, from her bright Sunne-like resplendaunce) the orient beames of your radiaunce. Into the Muses societie her selfe she hath lately adopted, & purchast diuine *Petrarch* another monument in *England*. Euer honored may she be of the royallest breed of wits, whose purse is so open to her poore beadsmens distreffes. Well may I say it, because I haue tride it, neuer liu'd a more magnificent Ladie of her degree on this earth. A number of men there bee, / who pursuing the high way to the Indies, haue perisht in lingring expectation before they could get thether ; but a neerer Cut haue I found in her extraordinarie liberalitie and bountie : and to a companie of my malcontent companions will discover if it please them, how to be gainfull and gain-coping nauigators if they will insist in my directions. Now I must tie my selfe to the Printers paper limits, and knit vp much thankfulnessse in few words. Deare Mistris, perswade your selfe, that no frowning misfortune or anye accident whatsoeuer, shall diuorce me from your reuerence. No more I craue in requitall, but that you would put me in the checke-roule of your remembrance, and not salute me as a stranger.

*Your vertues immoueable Votarie :*

THO: NASHE.



To Master or Goodman Reader, generally disperfed East or West.

**G**Entlemen (according to the laudable custome) I am to court you with a few premisses considered: but a number of you there bee, who consider neither premisses nor conclusion, but piteously torment Title Pages on euerie poast: neuer reading farther of anie Booke, than Imprinted by Simeon such a signe, and yet with your dudgeon iudgement will desperatelie presume to run vp to the hard hilts through the whole bulke of it. Martin Momus, and splaie footed Zoylus that in the eight and sixt age of Poetrie, and first yere of the reigne of Tarltons toies kept a foule stir in Poules Church-yard, are now reuiu'd againe: and like wanton Whelpes that haue wormes in their tungs, slauer and betouse euerie paper they meete withall. Yea, if they chance but on a moate or a wind bladder, they neuer haue done with it, till they haue cleane bandied and tost it out of sight. For my part, I wish that I may be both out of their sight and out

*of their minde too: and if their winy wits must needs be working, that they would rather be Tailors to make, than botchers or coblers to amend or to marre. Come, come, I know their dull tricks wel inough, you shal haue them lie in child-bed one and thirtie weeks and eight daies of three bad lines and a halfe, & afterward spend a vvhole twelue month in spunging & sprucing them, honest thriftie Peter Littleton discharging their commons all the vvhile: but such poore fellowes as I, that cannot put out money to be paid againe vvhhen vve come from Constantinople, either must haue our vvorke dispatcht by the vveeks end, or els vve may go beg: and yet I will not beg of them, neither go to the vvhorld neuer so hard, no not so much as a good word: but if in vvord or deed I hear that they vvrong me, Ile meet them right if I can. And so I leaue them to stop mustard pots with my leaues if they will, or to their owne will vvhatsoeuer.*

THOMAS NASH.







## The Terrors of the Night.

OR

### A Discourse of Apparitions.



Little to beguile time idly discontented, and fatisfie some of my solitary friends heere in the Countrey, I haue hastily vnder-tooke to write of the wearie fancies of the Night, wherein if I weary none with my weak fancies, I will hereafter leane harder on my penne and fetch the petegree of my praise, from the vtmost of paines.

As touching the terrors of the night, they are as many as our finnes. The Night is the Diuels Blacke booke, wherein hee recordeth all our transgressions. Euen as when a condemned man is put into a darke dungeon, secluded from all comfort of light or companie, he doth nothing but despairfully call to minde his gracelesse former / life, and

the brutish outrages and misdemeanours that haue thrown him into that desolate horror: so when Night in her rustie dungeon hath imprisoned our ey-sight, and that we are shut seperatly in our chambers from resort, the diuell keepeth his audit in our sin-guilty consciences, no sense but surrenders to our memorie a true bill of parcels of his detestable impieties. The table of our hart is turned to an index of iniquities, and all our thoughts are nothing but texts to condemne vs.

The rest we take in our beds is such another kinde of rest, as the wearie traueller taketh in the coole soft grasse in summer; who thinketh there to lye at ease, and refresh his tyred limmes, layeth his fainting head vnawares on a loathsome neast of snakes.

Well haue the Poets tearmd night the nurse of cares, the mother of despaire, the daughter of hell.

Some Diuines haue had this conceipt, that God would haue made all day and no night, if it had not been to put vs in minde, there is Hell as well as a Heauen.

Such is the peace of the subiects, as is the peace of the Prince vnder whom they are gouerned. As God is intitled the Father of light, so is the diuell furnamed the Prince of darknesse, which is the night. The only peace of minde that the diuell hath is dispaire, wherefore wee that liue

in his nightly kingdome of darknes, must needs taste some disquiet.

The Rauen and the Doue that were sent out of *Noes* Arke, to discover the worlde after the generall Deluge, may well be an allegorie of the day and the night. The day / is our good Angell the Doue, that returneth to our eyes with an Oliue branch of peace in his mouth (presenting quiet and securitie to our distracted soules and consciences); the night is that ill angel the Rauen, which neuer commeth back to bring anie good tidings of tranquillitie: a continuall messenger hee is of dole and misfortune. The greatest curse almost that in the scripture is threatened, is, that the rauens shal picke out their eies in the valley of death. This curfed rauen the night, pecks out mens eyes in the valley of death. It hindreth them from looking to heauen for succor, where their Redeemer dwelleth: wherefore no doubt it is a time most fatall and vnhalloved. This being proued, that the diuell is a speciall predominant Planet of the night, and that our creator for our punishment hath allotted it him as his peculiar seignorie and kingdome, from his inueterate enuie, I will amplifie the vgly terrours of the night. The names importing his mallice, which the scripture is plentiful of, I wil here omit; least some men shuld think I went about to coniure. Sufficeth

vs to haue this heedfull knowledge of him, that hee is an auncient male content, and seeketh to make anie one desperat like himselfe. Like a cunning fowler to this end he spreadeth his nets of temptation in the darke, that men might not see to auoyd them. As the Poet saith.

*Quæ nimis apparent retia vitat auis.  
Too open nets euen simple birds doo shun.*

Therefore in another place (which it cannot be but the diuell hath read) he counsaileth thus.

*Noctem / peccatis & fraudibus obice nubem.  
By night time sinne, and cloake thy fraud with clouds.*

When hath the diuell commonly first appeared vnto anie man but in the night?

In the time of infidelitie, when spirits were so familiar with men that they cald them *Dii Penates*, their household Gods or their Lares, they neuer sacrificed vnto them till Sunne-setting. The Robbin-good-fellowes, Elfes, Fairies, Hobgoblins of our latter age, which idolatrous former daies and the fantastickall world of Greece ycleaped *Fawnes*, *Satyres*, *Dryades*, & *Hamadryades*, did most of their merry pranks in the Night. Then ground they malt, and had hempen shirts for their labours, daunst in rounds in greene meadowes, pinchd maids in their sleep that swept not their

houses cleane, and led poore Trauellers out of their way notoriously.

It is not to be gain-said, but the diuell can transforme himselfe into an angell of light, appeare in the day aswell as in the night, but not in this subtil world of Christianity so vsuall as before. If he doo, it is when mens mindes are extraordinarily throwne downe with discontent, or inly terrified with some horrible concealed murder, or other hainous crime close smothered in secret. In the day he may smoothly in some mild shape insinuat, but in the night he takes vpon him like a tyrant. There is no theefe that is halfe so hardie in the day, as in the night, no more is the diuell. A generall principle it is, hee that doth ill hateth the light.

This Macheuillian tricke hath hee in him worth the noting, that those whom he dare not vnited or together encounter, / disioined and diuided, hee will one by one assaile in their sleepe. And euen as Ruptures and crampes doo then most torment a man when the bodie with any other disease is distemperd, so the Diuell when with any other sickenes or malladie the faculties of our reason are enfeebled and distemperd, will be most busie to disturbe vs and torment vs.

In the quiet silence of the night he will be sure to surprize vs, when he vnfallibly knowes we shall

be vnarmed to resist, and that there will be full audience granted him to vndermine or perswade what he lists. All that euer he can scare vs with, are but *Seleucus* ayrie Castles, terrible bug-beare brags, and nought els, which with the least thought of faith are quite vanished and put to flight. Neither in his owne nature dare he come nere vs, but in the name of sin, and as Gods executioner. Those that catch birds imitate their voyces, so will hee imitate the voyces of Gods vengeance, to bring vs like birds into the net of eternall damnation.

Children, fooles, ficke-men or mad-men hee is most familiar with (for he still delights to worke vpon the aduantage) and to them he boldly reuealeth, the whole astonishing treasurie of his wonders.

It will be demaunded why in the likenes of ones father or mother, or kinsfolks, he oftentime presents himselfe vnto vs?

No other reason can bee giuen of it but this, that in those shapes which hee supposeth most familiar vnto vs, and that wee are inclined to with a naturall kind of loue, we will sooner harken to him than otherwise.

Should / he not disguise himselfe in such subtil formes of affection, we would flie from him as a serpent, and eschew him with that hatred he ought to be eschewd. If anie aske him why he is more

conuerfant & busie in church-yards and places where men are buried, than in anie other places? It is to make vs beleeeue that the bodies & foules of the departed rest entirely in his possession, and the peculiar power of death is resigned to his disposition. A rich man delights in nothing so much as to be vncessantly raking in his treasure, to bee turning ouer hys rustie gold euerie houre: the boanes of the dead, the diuell counts his chiefe treasure, and therfore is he continually raking amongst them; and the rather he doth it, that the liuing which heare it should bee more vnwilling to die, infomuch as after death their boanes should take no rest.

It was said of *Cataline*, *Vultum gestauit in manibus*, with the turning of a hand he could turne and alter his countenance. Farre more nimble and sodaine is the Diuell in shifting his habit, his forme he can change, and cogge as quicke as thought.

What do we talke of one diuell? There is not a roome in anie mans house, but is pestred and close packed with a campe royall of diuels. *Chrisostome* saith, the aire and earth are three parts inhabited with spirits. Hereunto the Philosopher alluded, when hee said, Nature made no voydnes in the whole vniuerfall: for no place (bee it no bigger than a pock hole in a mans face) but is close

thronged with them. Infinite millions of them wil hang fwarming about a worm-eaten nose.

Don / *Lucifer* himfelfe their grand *Capitano*, asketh no better throne than a bleare eye to fet vp his ftate in. Vpon a haire they will fit like a nit, and ouer-dredge a bald pate like a white fcurffe. The wrinkles in old witches viſages, they eate out to entrench themſelues in.

If in one man a whole legion of diuells haue bin billeted, how manie hundred thouſand legions retaine to a Tearme at *London*? If I ſaid but to a *Tauerne*, it were an infinite thing. In *Weſtminſter* Hall a man can ſcarce breath for them : for in euery corner they houer as thick as moates in the funne.

The *Druides* that dwelt in the Ile of *Man*, which are famous for great coniurers, are reported to haue beene louſie with familiars. Had they but put their finger and their thumb into their neck, they could haue pluckt out a whole neaſt of them.

There be them that thinke euerie ſparke in a flame is a ſpirit, and that the wormes which at ſea eate through a ſhip, are ſo alſo : which may verie well bee ; for haue not you ſeene one ſparke of fire burne a whole towne, & a man with a ſparke of lightning made blinde, or kild outright. It is impoſſible the gunnes ſhould goe off as



they doo, if there were not a spirit either in the fier, or in the powder.

Now for wormes : what makes a dog run mad, but a worme in his tung? and what should that worme bee, but a spirit? Is there anie reason, such small vermine as they are, should deuoure such a vast thing as a shippe, or haue the teeth to gnaw through yron and wood? No, no, they are spirits, or els it were incredible.

*Tullius / Hostilius* who tooke vpon him to coniure vp *Ioue* by *Numa Pompilius* bookes, had no sence to quake & tremble at the wagging and shaking of euery leafe, but that he thought all leaues are full of wormes, and those wormes are wicked spirits.

If the bubbels in streames were wel searcht, I am perswaded they would be found to be little better. Hence it comes that mares (as *Columella* reporteth) looking their formes in the water, run mad. A flea is but a little beast, yet if she were not possesst with a spirit, she could neuer leape and skip so as she doth. *Froisard* saith, the Earle of *Fois* had a familiar that presented it selfe vnto him in the likenes of two rushes fighting one with another. Not so much as *Tewksburie* mustard but hath a spirit in it or els it would neuer bite so. Haue wee not read of a number of men that haue ordinarily carried a familiar or a spirite in a ring

in ſtead of a ſparke of a diamond? Why I tell ye we cannot break a crum of bread ſo little, as one of them will be if they liſt.

From this generall diſcourſe of ſpirits, let vs digreſſe, & talke another while of their ſeperate natures and properties.

The ſpirits of the fire which are the pureſt and perfecteſt, are merry, pleaſant, and well inclined to wit, but neuertheles gyddie, and vnconſtant.

Thoſe whome they poſſeſſe, they cauſe to excell in what euer they vndertake. Or Poets or boone companions they are out of queſtion.

*Socrates* Genius was one of this ſtampe, and the Doue wherewith the Turks hold *Mahomet* their Prophet to bee / inſpired. What their names are, and vnder whome they are gouerned, the Diſcouerie of witchcraft hath amplified at large, wherefore I am exempted from that labour. But of the diuineſt quinteſſence of mettals and of wines are many of theſe ſpirits extracted. It is almoſt impoſſible for any to bee encumbered with ill ſpirits, who is continually conuerſant in the excellent reſtoratiue diſtillations of wit and of Alcumie. Thoſe that rauenouſly englut themſelues with groſſe meates, and reſpect not the quality but the quantity of what they eate, haue no affinity with theſe ſpirits of the fire.

A man that will entertaine them muſt not

pollute his bodie with any grosse carnall copulation or inordinate beaftly defires, but loue pure beauty, pure vertue, and not haue his affections linsey wolsey, intermingled with luft, and things worthy of liking.

As for example if hee loue good Poets hee must not countenance Ballet-makers, if he haue learned Phifitions he must not fauor horfe-leaches and mountebanks: for a bad spirit and a good can neuer endure to dwell together.

Those spirits of the fire, howeuer I terme them comparatiuely good in respect of a number of bad, yet are they not simply well inclinde, for they bee by nature ambitious, haughty and proud, nor do they loue vertue for it selfe any whit, but because they would ouerquell and outstrip others, with the vaine glorious ostentation of it. A humor of monarchizing and nothing els it is, which makes them affect rare quallified studies. Many Atheists are with these spirits inhabited.

To / come to the spirits of the water, the earth, & the ayre, they are dull flegmaticke drones, things that haue much mallice without anie great might. Drunkards, mizers, and women they vsually retain too. Water (you all know) breedeth a medley kinde of licor called beere ; with these watrie spirits they were possessed, that first inuented the art of bruing. A quagmire consistig

of mud and sand, fendeth forth the like pudly mixture.

All rheumes, pofes, Sciaticaes, dropfies, and gouts, are difeafes of their flegmaticke engendring. Sea-faring men of what fort fo euer, are chiefe entertainers of thofe fpirits. Greedy vintners likewise giue hofpitalitie to a number of them ; who hauing read no more fcripture, than that myracle of Chrifts turning water into wine in Chanaan, thinke to doo a farre ftranger miracle than euer he did, by turning wine into water.

Ale houfes and cookes fhadie pauilions, by watric fpirits are principally vpholden.

The fpirits of the earth are they which crie, all bread and no drinke, that loue gold and a buttond cap aboue heauen. The woorth in nought they refpect, but the weight, good wits they naturally hate ; infomuch as the element of fire their progenitor, is a waft-good & a confumer. If with their earth-plowing fnowtes they can turne vp a pearle out of a dunghill, it is all they defire. Witches haue manie of thefe fpirits, and kill kyne wyth them. The giants and chiefetaines of thofe fpirites, are powrfull fometimes to bring men to their ends, but not a iot of good can they doo for their liues.

Souldiers with thefe terreftriall fpirits participate part / of their effence, for nothing but yron and

golde (which are earths excrements) they delight in. Besides, in another kinde they may be said to participate with them, inasmuch as they confirme them in their furie, & congeale their mindes with a bloodie resolution. Spirites of the earth they were that entred into the heard of swyne in the Gospel. There is no citie merchant, or country purchaser, but is haunted with a whole hoste of these spirits of the earth. The Indies is their Metropolitane realme of abode.

As for the spirits of the aire, which haue no other visible bodies or form, but such as by the vnconstant glimmering of our eyes is begotten; they are in truth all show and no substance, deluders of our imagination, & nought els. Carpet knights, politique statesmen, women & childrē they most conuers with. Carpet knights they inspire with a humor of setting big looks on it, being the basest cowards vnder heauen, couering an apes hart with a lions case, and making false alarums when they mean nothing but a may-game. Politique statesmen they priuily incite, to bleare the worlds eyes with cloudes of common wealth pretences, to broach any enmitie or ambitious humor of their owne, vnder a title of their cuntries preferuation. To make it faire or fowle when they list to procure popularity, or induce a preamble to some mightie peece of prowling, to stir

vp tempests round about, & replenish heauen with prodigies and wonders, the more to ratifie their auaritious religion. Women they vnder-hand instruct to pounce and boulder out theyr brawn-falne deformities, to new perboile with painting their /rake-leane withered visages, to set vp flaxe shops on their foreheads, when all their owne haire is dead and rotten, to sticke their gums round with Comfets, when they haue not a tooth left in their heads to help them to chide withall.

Children they seduce with garish obiects and toyish babies, abusing them many yeares with flight vanities. So that you see all their whole influence is but thin ouer cast vapours, flying clouds disperfed with the least winde of wit or vnderstanding.

None of these spirits of the ayre or the fire haue so much predominance in the night as the spirits of the earth and the water ; for they feeding on foggie-braind melancholly, engender thereof many vncouth terrible monsters. This much obserue by the way, that the grossest part of our blood is the melancholy humor, which in the spleene congealed whose office is to disperse it, with his thicke steaming fennie vapours casteth a mist ouer the spirit, and cleane bemarketh the phantasie.

And euen as slime and durt in a standing puddle, engender toads and frogs, and many other

vnfightly creatures, so this slimie melancholy humor still still thickning as it stands still, engendreth many mishapen objects in our imaginations. Sundry times wee behold whole Armies or men skirmishing in the Ayre, Dragons, wilde beasts, bloody streamers, blasing Comets, fire strakes, with other apparitions innumerable: whence haue all these their conglomerate matter but from fuming meteors that arise from the earth, so from the fuming melancholly of our spleene mounteth that hot matter into the higher / Region of the braine, whereof manie fearfull visions are framed. Our reason euen like drunken fumes it displaceth and intoxicates, & yeelds vp our intellectuall apprehension, to be mocked and troden vnder foote, by euerie false object or counterfet noyse that comes neere it. Heerein specially consisteth our senses defect and abuse; that those organicall parts which to the minde are ordained embassadours, doo not their message as they ought, but by some misdiet or misgouernment being distempered, faile in their report, and deliuer vp nothing but lyes and fables.

Such is our braine oppressed with Melancholly, as is a clocke tyed downe with two heauie weights or plummets; which as it cannot chuse but monstrously goe a square, or not goe at all: so must our braines of necessitie be either monstrously distracted, or vtterly destroyed thereby.

Lightly this extremitie of Melancholye neuer commeth, but before some notable sicknesse ; it faring with our braynes as with Bees, who, as they exceedingly toyle and turmoile before a storme or change of weather, so doo they beate and toyle, and are infinitelie confused before sicknes.

Of the effects of melancholy I need not dilate, or discourse how many encumbred with it, haue thought themselves birdes and beasts, with feathers, and hornes, and hydes ; others, that if they should make water they should drowne all the world ; others, that they can neuer bleed inough./

Phisitions in their circuit euerie day meet with far more ridiculous experience. Onely it shall suffice a little by the way to handle one speciall effect of it, which is dreames.

A dreame is nothing els but a bubling scum or froath of the fancie, which the Day hath left vndigested ; or an after feast made of the fragments of idle imaginations.

How manie sorts there be of them no man can rightly set downe, since it scarce hath been heard, there were euer two men that dreamed alike. Diuers have written diuersly of their causes, but the best reason among them all that I could euer picke out, was this, that as an arrow which is shot out of a bow, is sent forth manie times with such force, that it flyeth farre beyond the marke



wherat it was aymed: so our thoughts intensively fixt all the day time vpon a marke wee are to hit, are now and then ouer drawne with such force, that they flye beyonde the marke of the day into the confines of the night. There is no man put to any torment, but quaketh & trembleth a great while after the executioner hath withdrawne his hand from him. In the daye time wee torment our thoughts and imaginations with fundry cares and deuices; all the night time they quake and tremble after the terror of their late suffering, and still continue thinking of the perplexities they haue endured. To nothing more aptly can I compare the working of our braines after we haue vnyoakt and gone to bed, than to the glimmering and dazeling of a mans eyes when hee comes newly out of the bright Sunne, into the darke shadow.

Euen as ones eyes glimmer and dazle when they are withdrawne out of the light into darknesse: so are our thoughts / troubled & vexed when they are retyred from labor to ease, and from skirmishing to surgerie.

You must giue a wounded man leaue to grone while he is in dressing: Dreaming is no other than groaning, while sleepe our surgeon hath vs in cure.

He that dreams merily is like a boy new breetcht,

who leapes and daunceth for ioy his pain is past : but long that ioy staves not with him, for presently after his master the day seeing him so iocund and pleafant, comes and dooes as much for him againe, whereby his hell is renued.

No fuch figure of the first Chaos whereout the world was extraught, as our dreames in the night. In them all states, all sexes, all places are confounded and meete together.

Our cogitations runne on heapes like men to part a fray, where euerie one strikes his next fellow. From one place to another without consultation they leap, like rebels bent on a head. Souldiers iust vp and downe they imitate at the facke of a Citie, which spare neither age nor beautie: the yong, the old, trees, steeple & mountaines, they confound in one gallimafrie.

Of those things which are most knowne to vs some of vs that haue moyst braynes make to ourselues images of memorie: on those images of memorie whereon we buyld in the daye, comes some superfluous humour of ours, lyke a Iackeanapes in the night, and erects a puppet-stage, or some such ridiculous idle childish inuention.

A Dreame is nothing els but the Eccho of our concepts in the day.

But / other-while it fals out, that one Eccho borrowes of another: so our dreames (the Ecchoes

of the day) borrow of anie noyse we heare in the night.

As for example, if in the dead of the night there be anie rumbling, knocking, or disturbance neere vs, we straight dream of warres, or of thunder. If a dogge howle, we suppose we are transported into hell, where we heare the complaint of damned ghosts. If our heads lye double or vneasie, we imagine we vphold all heauen with our shoulders like *Atlas*. If wee be troubled with too manie clothes, then we suppose the night mare rides vs.

I knew one that was cramped, and hee dreamt that hee was torne in peeces with wylde horses ; and another, that hauing a blacke fant brought to his bed side at mid night, dreamt he was bidden to dinner at Iron-mongers Hall.

Anie meate that in the day time we eat against our stomackes, begetteth a dismall dreame. Discontent also in dreames hath no little predominance: for euen as from water that is troubled, the mud disperfingly ascendeth from the bottome to the top ; so when our blood is chafed, disquieted and troubled, all the light imperfect humours of our bodie, ascend like mud vp aloft into the head.

The clearest spring a little tucht, is creased wyth a thousand circles : as those momentarie circles for all the world, such are our dreames. When all

is said, melancholy is the mother of dreames, and of all terrours of the night whatsoever.

Let / it but affirme it hath seene a spirit (though it be but the moon-shine on the wall) the best reason wee haue cannot infringe it.

Of this melancholy there be two sorts ; one that digested by our liuer swimmeth like oyle aboue water, & that is rightly tearmed Women's melancholy, which lasteth but for an houre, and is (as it were) but a coppie of their countenance : the other sinketh downe to the bottome like the lees of the wine, and that corrupteth all the blood, and is the cause of lunacie. Well moderated recreations are the medicine to both : surfet or excessiue studie the causes of either.

There were gates in *Rome*, out of which nothing was carried but dust and dung, and men to execution : so manie of the gates of our senses serue for nothing but to conueigh out excrementall vapors, & affrighting deadly dreames, that are worse than executioners vnto vs.

Ah woe be to the folitarie man that hath his finnes continually about him, that hath no withdrawing place from the diuell and his temptations.

Much I wonder how treason and murder dispense with the darknes of the night, how they can shriue themselues to it, and not raue and die. Me thinkes they shuld imagine that hell imbraceth

them round, when she ouer spreads them with her blacke pitchie mantle.

Dreames to none are so fearfull, as to those whose accusing priuate guilt expects mischief euerie hower for their merit. Wonderfull superstitious are such persons in obseruing euerie accident that befalls them: and that their superstition is as good as an hundred furies to torment / them. Neuer in this world shall he enioy one quiet day, that once hath giuen himselfe ouer to be her slaue. His eares cannot glow, his nose itch, or his eyes smart, but his destinie stands vpon her triall, and till she bee acquitted or condemned, he is miserable.

A cricket or a rauen [will] keepe him fortie times in more awe than God or the Diuell.

If he chance to kill a spider, he hath suppressed an enemie; if a spinner creepe vpon him, hee shall haue golde raine downe from heauen: if his nose bleede, some of his kinsfolkes is dead: if the salt fall right against him, all the starres cannot saue him from some immediate misfortune.

The first Witch was *Proserpine*, and she dwelt halfe in heauen and halfe in hell: halfe witches are they that pretending anie Religion, meddle halfe with God, and halfe with the diuell. Medling with the diuell I call it, when ceremonies are obserued, which haue no ground from Diuinitie.

In another kinde witches may be said to meddle halfe with God and halfe with the Diuell, because in their Exorcismes they vse halfe Scripture, and halfe blasphemie.

The greatest and notablest heathen forcerers that euer were, in all their hellish adiurations, used the name of the one true and euer-liuing God: but such a number of damned potestates they ioined with him, that it might seeme the starres had darkned the Sunne, or the Moone was eclipsed by candle-light.

Of all Countries vnder the Skie, *Persia* was most ad/dicted vnto Dreames. *Darius* King of the *Medes* and *Persians* before his fatall discomfiture, dreamt hee saw an Estritch with a winged crowne ouer-running the earth, and deuouring his Iuel-coffer, as if it had beene an ordinarie peece of yron. That Iuel-coffer was by *Alexander* surprised, and afterward *Homers* Workes in it carried before him, euen as the Mace or Purse is customably carried before our Lord Chancelor.

*Hannibal* dreamed a little before his death, that hee was drowned in the poysonous Lake *Asphalites*, when it was presently his hap within some few dayes distance, to seeke his fate by the same meanes in a vault vnder earth.

In *India* the women verie often conceiue by diuells in their sleepe.

In *Ifland* (as I haue read and heard) fpirites in lykenesse of ones father or mother after they are deceased, doo conuerse with them as naturally, as if they were liuing.

Other fpirites like rogues they haue among them, destitute of all dwelling and habitation, and they chillingly complayne if a Constable aske them *Cheuela* in the night, that they are going to Mount *Hecla* to warme them.

That Mount *Hecla* a number conclude to bee hell mouth : for neere vnto it are heard such yellings and groanes, as *Ixion*, *Titius*, *Sisiphus*, and *Tantalus* blowing all in one trumpet of distresse, could neuer conioyned bellowe foorth.

Bond / men in *Turkey* or in *Spaine* are not so ordinarilye sold, as witches sell familiars there. Farre cheaper maye you buy a winde amongst them, than you can buy wine or faire words in the Court. Three knots in a thred, or an odde grandame blessing in the corner of a napkin, will carrie you all the world ouer.

Wee when we frowne knit our browes, but let a wizzard there knit a noose or a riding snarle on his beard, & it is haile, storme and tempest a month after.

More might be spoken of the prodigies this countrey fendes foorth, if it were not too much erring from my scope. Whole Ilands they haue

of yce, on which they build and traffique as on the maine land.

Admirable (aboue the rest) are the incomprehensible wonders of the bottomlesse Lake *Vether*, ouer which no fowle flies but is frozen to death, nor anie man passeth but he is senselesly benumbed like a statue of marble. All the inhabitants round about it are deafned wyth the hideous roring of his waters when the winter breaketh vp, & the yce in his dissoluing giues a terrible cracke like to thunder, when as out of the midst of it (as out of *Mont-Gibell*) a sulphureous stinking smoak issues, that welnigh poysons the whole Countrey.

A poyson light on it, how come I to digresse to such a dull, Lenten Northren Clyme, where there is nothing but stock-fish, whetstones and cods-heads? Yet now I remember me, I haue not lost my way so much as I thoght, for my theame is The terrors of the Night, and *Island* is one of the chiefe kingdomes of the night; they hauing scarce so much day there, as will serue a child to ask his father[s] / blessing. Marry with one commoditie they are blest, they haue Ale that they carry in their pockets lyke glue, and euer when they would drinke, they set it on the fire and melt it.

It is reported, that the Pope long since gaue them a dispensation to receiue the Sacrament in ale, infomuch as for their vncessant frosts there,



no wine but was turned to red emayle, as soone as euer it came amongst them. Farewell frost: as much to fay, as farewell *Island*, for I haue no more to fay to thee.

I care not much if I dream yet a little more: & to fay the troth, all this whole Tractate is but a dreame, for my wits are not halfe awaked in it: & yet no golden dreame, but a leaden dreame is it; for in a leaden standish I stand fishing all day, but haue none of Saint *Peters* lucke to bring a fish to the hooke that carries any filuer in the mouth. And yet there be of them that carrie filuer in the mouth too, but none in the hand: that is to fay, are verie bountifull and honorable in their words, but except it be to sweare indeed, no other good deedes comes from them.

Filthie Italionat complement-mungers they are, who would faine be counted the Courts *Gloriosos*, and the refined iudges of wit; when if their wardrops and the withred bladders of their braines were well searcht, they haue nothing but a fewe moath-eaten cod-peece futes (made against the comming of *Mounfier*) in the one, and a few scraps of out-landish prouerbes in the other: and these alone doo buckler them from the name of beggers and idiots. Other-while perhaps they maye keep a coyle with / the spirit of *Tasso*, and then they folde their armes like Braggarts, writhe their

\*

neckes *alla Neapolitano*, and turne vp their eye-balls like men intraunced.

Come, come, I am entraunced from my Text I wote well, and talke idly in my sleepe longer than I should : those that will harken any more after Dreames, I referre them to *Artimidorus*, *Synefius*, & *Cardan*, with many others which onely I haue heard by their names, but I thanke God had neuer the plodding patience to reade, for if they bee no better than some of them I haue perused, euery weatherwise old wife might write better.

What sense is there that the yoalke of an egge should signifie gold, or dreaming of Beares, or fire, or water, debate and anger, that euerything must bee interpreted backward as Witches say their Pater-noster, good being the character of bad, and bad of good.

As well we may calculate from euery accident in the day, and not goe about any busines in the morning till we haue seene on which hand the Crow fits.

O Lord I haue heard many a wise Gentlewoman say, I am so merry, and haue laught so hartily, that I am sure ere long to bee crost with some sad tydings or other ; all one as if men comming from a Play should conclude, Well we haue seene a Commedie to-day, and therefore there cannot chooseth but be a Tragedie to morrow.

I doo not deny but after extremity of myrth, followe many sad accidents, but yet those sad accidents (in my pinion) wee meere ly pluck[t] on with the feare of comming mischiefe, and those meanes wee in pollicie moſt vſe to preuent it, ſoonest enwrappe vs in it, and that was Sathans / tricke in the old world of gentillisme to bring to paſſe all his blind Prophecies.

Could any men ſet downe certaine rules of expounding of Dreames, and that their rules were generall, holding in all as well as in ſome, I would beginne a litle to liſt to them, but commonly that which is portentue in a King is but a friuolous fancie in a beggar, and let him dreame of Angels, Eagles, Lyons, Griffons, Dragons neuer ſo, all the augurie vnder heauen will not allot him ſo much as a good almes.

Some will obieſt vnto mee for the certainty of Dreames, the Dreames of *Cyrus*, *Cambyſes*, *Pompey*, *Cæſar*, *Darius*, & *Alexander*. For thoſe I anſwer, that they were rather viſions than Dreames, extraordinarily ſent from heauen to foreſhew the tranſlation of Monarchies.

The Greeke and Romane hiſtories are full of them, and ſuch a ſtirre they keepe with their Augurers and Soothſayers, how they foretold long before by Dreames and beaſts and birds intrayles, the loſſe of ſuch a battaile, the death of ſuch a

Captaine or Emperour, when false knaves, they were all as Prophet Calchas, pernicious Traytors to their Country and them that put them in trust, and were many times hyred by the aduerse part to disharten and discourage their Masters by such Conycatching Riddles as might in truth be turned any way.

An easie matter was it for them to prognosticate treasons and conspiracies, in which they were vnderhand inlincked themselves, & howeuer the world went it was a good pollicie for them to saue their heades by the shift, for if the treasons chaunst afterwards to come to light, it would / not be suspected they were practisers in them, inso-much as they reueald them, or if they should by theyr confederates be appealed as practisers, yet might they plead and pretend it was done but of spite and mallice to supplant them for so bewraying and laying open their intents.

This tricke they had with them besides, that neuer till the verie instant that anie treason was to be put in execution, and it was so neere at hand that the Prince had no time to preuent it, would they speake one word of it, or offer to disclose it: yea and euen then such vnfit seasons for their colourable discouerie would they picke foorth, as they would be sure he should haue no leasure to attend it.

But you will aske why at all as then they should step forth to detect it? Marry to cleare themselves to hys successors, that there might bee no reuenge profecuted on their liues.

So did *Spurina* the great Astrologer: euen as *Cæsar* in the midst of all his busines was going hastily to the Senate house, he popt a bill in his hand of *Brutus* and *Cassius* conspiracie, and all the names of those that were colleagued with them.

Well he might haue thought that in such hast by the highway side, he would not stay to peruse any schedules, and well he knew and was ascertained, that assoone as euer he came into the Capitoll, the bloudie deed was to be accomplished.

Shall I impart vnto you a rare secrecy how these great famous Coniurers and cunning men ascend by degrees / to foretell secrets as they doo. First and formost they are men which haue had some little sprinkling of Grammer learning in their youth; or at least I will allowe them to haue been Surgeons or Apothecaries prentises, these I say hauing runne through their thrift at the elbowes, and riotouslie amongst harlots and make-shifts spent the annuitie of halfpennie ale that was left them, fall a beating their braynes how to botch vp an easie gainfull trade, & set a new nap on an old occupation.

Hereupon presently they rake some dunghil for a few durtie boxes and plaisters, and of tosted cheefe and candles ends, temper vp a fewe oyntments and firrups: which hauing done, 'farre North, or into some such rude simple countrey they get them, and set vp.

Scarce one month haue they staid there, but what with their vaunting and prating, and speaking fustian in steede of Greeke, all the Shyres round about do ring with their fame: and then they begin to get them a Library of three or foure old — rustie manuscript books, which they themselues nor anie els can read; and furnish their shops with a thousand *quid pro quos*, that would choake anie horse: besides, some wast trinkets in their chambers hung vp, which maye make the world halfe in ieaouzies they can coniure.

They will euermore talke doubtfully, as if there were more in them than they meant to make publique, or was appliable to euerie common mans capacitie: when God bee their rightfull Iudges, they vtter all that they know and a great deale more.

To knit vp their knaueries in short (which in sooth is / the hang-mans office, & nones els) hauing pickt vp theyr crummes thus pretely well in the Countrey, they drawe after a time a little neerer and neerer to London; and at length into

London they filch themfelues priuely : but how ? Not in the hart of the Cittie will they prefume at firft dafh to hang out their rat-banners, but in the fkirtes and out-fhifts fteale out a figne ouer a Coblers ftall, lyke Aqua-vitæ fellers and ftocking menders.

Manie poore people they win to beleeeue in them, who haue not a barreld Herring or a peece of poore Iohn that lookes ill on it, but they will bring the water that he was fteeped in vnto them in an vrinall, & craue their iudgment whether he be rottē, or merchant & chapmanable or no. The brute of their cunning thus traueilling frō ale houfe to Ale houfe, at length is transported in the great hiltes of one or other countrey Seruing-mans fword to fome good Tauerne or Ordinarie : where it is no fooner arriued, but it is greedily fnatcht vp by fome dappert Mounfier Diego, who liues by telling of newes, & falfe dice, and it may be hath a pretie infight into the cardes alfo, together with a little skill in his Iacobs ftaffe, and hys Compaffe : being able at all times to difcouer a new paffage to *Virginia*.

This needie Gallaunt (with the qualities afore-faid) ftraight trudgeth to fome Noble-mans to dinner, & there enlargeth the rumor of this newe Phifition, comments vpon euerie glaffe and violl that he hath, rayleth on our Galenifts, and calls

them dull gardners and hay-makers in a mans belly, compares them to dogs, who when they are sick eate graffe, and saies they are no better than pack / or malt horses, who if a man should knock out their brains will not goe out of the beaten high way; whereas his horseleach will leap ouer the hedge & ditch of a thousand *Dioscorides* and *Hippocrates*, and giue a man twentie poysons in one, but he would restore him to perfit health. With this strange tale the Noble-man inflamed, desires to bee acquainted with him: what does me he, but goes immediately and breaks with this mountebanke, telling him if he will diuide his gains with him, he will bring him in custome with such and such States, and he shall bee countenanst in the Court as he wold desire. The hungrie druggier, ambitious after preferment, agrees to anything, and to Court he goes; where being come to enterview, hee speaks nothing but broken English like a French Doctor, pretending to haue forgottē his naturall tung by trauell, when he hath neuer been farther than either the Lowe Countries or Ireland, inforced thether to flye either for getting a maid with child, or marrying two wiues. Suffiseth he fet[s] a good face on it, & will sweare he can extract a better Balsamum out of a chip than the Balm of Iudæa: yea, all receipts and authors you can name he syllogizeth of, & makes



a piſh at in compariſon of them he hath ſeen and read : whoſe names if you aſke, hee claps you in the mouth with halfe a dozen ſpruce titles, neuer til he inuēted them heard of by any Chriſtian. But this is moſt certaine, if he be of any ſect, he is a mettle-bruing Paracelfian, hauing not paſt one or two Probatums for al diſeaſes. But caſe he be called to praſtife, hee excuſeth it by great cures he hath in hand ; & will not encounter an infirmity but in the declining, that his credit may be more autētical or / els when by ſome ſecret intelligence hee is throughlie inſtructed of the whole proceſſe of his vnrecouerable extremitie, he comes grauely marching like a Iudge, and giues peremptorie ſentence of death ; whereby he is accounted a Prophet of deepe preſcience.

But how he comes to be the diuells ſecretarie, all this long tale vnrips not.

In ſecret be it ſpoken, he is not ſo great with the deuill as you take it. It may be they are neere a kinne, but yet you haue manie kindred that will doo nothing for one another ; no more will the diuell for him, except it is to damne him.

This is the Tittle eſt amen of it : that when he wexeth ſtale, and all his piſpots are crackt and wil no longer hold water, he ſets vp a coniuring ſchoole, and vndertakes to play the baud to Ladie Fortune.

Not a thiefe or a cut purse, but a man that hee keepes doth affociate with, & is of their fraternitie; only that his master when any thing is stoln may tell who it is that hath it. In petie trifles hauing gotten some credit, great Peeres entertaine him for one of their priuie counsaile, and if they haue anie daungerous enterprise in hand, they consult with him about successe.

All malcontents entending anie inuasiue violence against their Prince and Countrey runne head long to his oracle. Contrarie factions enbosome vnto him their inwardest complots, whilest he like a craftie Iacke a both sides, as if he had a spirite still at his elbow, reciprocally embowellet to the one what the other goes about; receiuing no intelligence from anie familiar, but their own mouths. / I assure you most of our chiefe noted Augurers and Soothsayers in *England* at this day, by no other Arte but this gaine their reputation.

They may verie well picke mens purses, like the vnskillfuller coufning kind of Alchumists, with their artificiall and ceremoniall Magicke, but no effect shall they atchieue thereby, though they would hang themselues: the reason is, the diuell of late is growen a puritane, and cannot away with anie ceremonies; he sees all Princes haue left off their States, and hee leaues off his state too, and

will not be inuocated with such solemnity as he was wont.

Priuate and disguised he passeth too and fro, and is in a thousand places in an houre.

Faire words cannot anie longer beguile him, for not a cue of curtisie will he doo anie man, except it be vpon a flat bill of fale; and so he chaffers with wyfards and witches euerie howre.

Now the world is almost at an end, he hath left forme and is all for matter; and like an Embroyderer or a Tailer he maketh hast of worke against a good time, which is the day of iudgement: therefore you goodmen exorcisers his olde acquaintance must pardon him, though (as heretofore) he stay not to dwell vpon complements.

*In diebus illis* when *Corineus* and *Gogmagog* were little boyes, I will not gainsaye but hee was wont to iest and sport wyth countrey people, and play the good fellowe amongst kitchin-wenches, sitting in an euening by the fire side making of posslets, and come a wooing to them in the likenes of a cooper, or a curmogionly purchaser: & some / times he would dresse himselfe like a Barbar, & wash and shauie all those that laye in such a chamber: other-while like a stale cutter of Queen hyue, hee would iustle men in their owne houses, pluck them out of bed by the heeles, and daunce in chaynes from

one chamber to another : now there is no goodnes in him but miserablenes and couetousnes.

Sooner he will pare his nayles cleanly, than cause a man to dreame of a pot of golde, or a money bag that is hid in the eaves of a thatcht house.

(Heere it is to bee noted, that it is a blessed thing but to dreame of gold, though a man neuer haue it.)

Such a dreame is not altogether ridiculous or impertinent, for it keepes flesh and bloud from despaire: all other are but as dust we raise by our steps; which awchyle mounteth aloft, and annoyeth our ey-sight, but presently disperfeth and vanisfeth.

Senior Sathan when he was a yong stripling, and had not yet gotten perfect audacity to set vpon vs in the day time, was a fly Polititian in dreames; but those dayes are gone with him, and now that he is thoroughly steeled in his scutcherie, hee playes aboue-boord boldly, & sweeps more stakes than euer he did before.

I haue rid a false gallop these three or foure pages; now I care not if I breathe mee, and walke soberly and demurely halfe a dozen turnes, like a graue Citizen going about to take the ayre.

To make a shaft or a bolt of this drumbling

subiect of dreames, from whence I haue bin toft off and on I know not how; this is my definitiue verdit: that one may aswel by / the smoke that comes out of a kitchen geffe what meat is there a broach, as by paraphrasing on smokie dreames præominate of future euent. Thus far notwithstanding Ile go with them; Phisitions by dreames may better discerne the distemperature of their pale clients, than either by vrine or ordure.

He that is inclining to a burning feuer shall dreame of frayes, lightning and thunder, of skirmishing with the diuell, and a hundred such like. He that is spyced with the gowte or the dropfie, frequently dreameth of fetters & manacles, and being put on the bilbowes, that his legges are turned to marble or adamant, and his feet like the giants that scal'd heauen kept vnder with Mount *Ossa* and *Peleon*, and earst while that they are fast locked in quagmyres. I haue heard aged mumping beldams as they sat warming their knees ouer a coale scratch ouer the argument verie curiously, and they would bid yong folks beware on what day they par'd their nayles, tell what luck euerie one should haue by the day of the weeke he was borne on; show how many years a man should liue by the number of wrinkles on his forehead, and stand descanting

not a litle of the difference in fortune when they are turnd vpwward, and when they are bent downward ; him that had a wart on his chin, they would confidently asfertaine he should haue no need of anie of his kin : marry they would likewise distinguish betweene the standing of the wart on the right side and on the left. When I was a little childe, I was a great auditor of theirs, and had all their witchcrafts at my fingers endes, as perfit as good morrow and good euen.

Of / the signification of dreames, whole catalogues could I recyte of theirs, which heere there is no roome for : but for a glance to this purpose, this I remember they would verie soberly affirme, that if one at supper eate birds, he should dreame of flying ; if fish, of swimming ; if venison of hunting, and so for the rest : as thogh those birds, fish, and venison beeing dead and disgested, did flie, swim and hold their chafe in their braynes ; or the solution of our dreames should be nought els but to expresse what meates we eate ouer-night.

From the vnequall and repugnant mixture of contrarious meates I iumpe with them, manie of our mystie cogitations proceede : and euen as fire maketh yron like it selfe, so the fire inflammations of our liuer, or stomack transforme our imaginations to their analagie and likenesse.

No humor in generall in our bodies ouerflowing or abounding, but the tips of our thoughts are dipt in hys tincture. And as when a man is readie to drowne, hee takes hold of anie thing that is next him : so our flutring thoughts, when wee are drowned in deadly sleepe, take hold, and coeſſence themſelues with anie ouerboyling humour which ſourſeth hieſt in our ſtomackes.

What heede then is there to be had of dreames, that are no more but the confuſed giddie action of our braines, made drunk with the innundation of humors?

Iuſt ſuch like impoſtures as is this Art of expoſition of dreames, are the artes of Phifiognomie and Palmetrie ; wherein who beareth moſt palme and praiſe, is the palpableſt / foole and Crepundio. Liues there anie ſuch flowe yce-braind beefe-witted gull, who by the riueled barke or outward rynde of a tree will take vpon him to foreſpeak how long it ſhall ſtand, what miſchances of wormes, caterpillers, boughs breaking, froſt bitings, cattells rubbing againſt, it ſhall haue? As abſurd is it, by the external branched ſeames or furrowed wrinkles in a mans face or hand, in particular or generall to coniecture and fore-dooome of his fate.

According to euerie ones labor or exerciſe, the palme of his hand is wrythen and pleyted, and

euerie daye alters as he alters his employments or pastimes: wherefore well may we collect, that he which hath a hand so brawned and enter-lined, vseth such and such toyles or recreations; but for the minde or disposition, we can no more looke into through it, than wee can into a looking Glasse through the wooden case thereof.

So also our faces, which fundrie times with surfets, greefe, studie, or intemperaunce, are most deformedlye welked and crumpled; there is no more to bee gathered by their sharpe embossed Ioyners anticke worke, or ragged ouer hangings or pit-falls; but that they haue beene layd vp in flouens presse, and with miscarriage and misgouernment are so fretted and galled.

My owne experience is but small, yet thus much I can say by his warrantize, that those fatall brands of phisiognomie which condemne men for fooles, and for idiots, and on the other side for trecherous circumuenterers and false brothers, haue in a hundred men I know been veriefied in the contrarie.

So / *Socrates* (the wisest man of *Greece*) was censured by a wrinkle-wyzard for the lumpisheft blockhead that euer went vpon two legs: whome though the Philosopher in pitie vouchsafed with a nyce distinction of Art and nature to rayse and recouer, when he was vtterly confounded with



a hiffe and a laughter, yet fure his insolent simplicity might lawfully haue fu'd out his patent of exemption ; for he was a forlorne creature, both in discretion and wit-craft.

Will you haue the summe of all : some subtill humorist, to feede fantasticke heads with innouations and nouelties, first inuented this trifling childish glose vppon dreames and phisognomie ; wherein he stroue onely to boast him selfe of a pregnant probable conceipt beyond philosophie or truth.

Let but anie man who is most conuerfant in the superstition of dreames, reckon me one that hath hapned iust ; and Ile set downe a Hundred out of Histories, that haue perished to foolerie.

To come to late dayes ; *Lewes* the xj. dreamt that he swam in blood on the toppe of the *Alpes* : which one Father *Robert* (a holy Hermit of his time) interpreted to be present death in his next warres against *Italy* : though hee liu'd and prosperd in all his enterprises a long while after.

So *Charles* the fifth sayling to the siege of *Tunis*, dreamt that the Citie met him on the sea like an Argosie, and ouerwhelmed his whole Nauie : when by *Cornelius Agrippa* the great Coniurer (who went along with him) it was expounded to be the ouerthrow of that famous expedition. / And thereupon *Agrippa* offred the

Emperor (if it pleased him) to blowe vp the Citie by Art Magicke in the ayre before his eyes, without anie farther ieopardie of warre or besieging. The Emperor vtterly refused it and said, Since it was Gods warres against an Infidel, he would neuer borrow aid of the diuell.

Some haue memorized, that *Agrippa* seeing his counsaile in that case reiected, and that the Emperour (notwithstanding his vnfortunate presage) was prosperous and successefull, within a few dayes after dyed franticke and desperate.

*Alphonso* King of *Naples* in like case, before the rumor of the French Kings comming into *Italy*, had a vision in the night presented vnto him of *Aeneas* ghoast hauing *Turnus* in chase, & *Iuno Pronuba* comming betwixt them, and parting them; whereby hee gest that by marriage their iarring Kingdomes should be vnited: but far otherwise it fell out; for the French King came indeed, and he was driuen thereby into such a melancholy extasie, that he thought the verie fowles of the ayre would snatch his Crowne from him; and no bough or arbour that ouershowd him, but enclosed him, and tooke him prisoner; and that not so much but the stones of the street fought to iustle him out of his Throne.

These examples I alledge, to proue there is

no certaintie in dreames ; and that they are but according to our deuifings and meditations in the day time.

I confesse the Saintes and Martirs of the Primitiue Church had vnfallible dreames fore-running their ends, as *Policarpus* and other : but those especially proceeded from / heauen, and not from anie vaporous dreggie parts of our blood or our braines.

For this cause the Turkes banish Learning from amongst them, because it is euerie daye setting men together by the eares, mouing straunge contentions, and alterations, and making his professors fainthearted and effeminate. Much more requisite were it that out of our ciuill Christian Common-wealths we seuerely banish and exterminate those fabulous commentaries on toyish fantasies, which feare-benum & effeminate the harts of the stoutest, cause a man without any ground to be iealous of his owne friends and his kinsfolkes, and withdraw hym from the searck and insight into more excellent things, to stand all his whole life sifting and winnowing dry rubbish chaffe, whose best bottom quintessence prooues in the end but sandie grauell and cockle.

Molestations and cares inough, the ordinarie course of our life tythes of his owne accord

vnto vs, though we seeke not a knot in a bulrush, or stuffe not our night pillowes with thistles to encrease our disturbance.

In our sleepe wee are agast and terrified, with the disordered skirmishing and conflicting of our sensitiue faculties: yet with this terror and agastment cannot wee rest ourselues satisfide, but we must pursue and hunt after a further feare in the recordation and too busie examining our paines ouer-passed.

Dreames in my minde if they haue anie premonstrances in them, the preparatiue feare of that they so premonstrate and denounce, is far worse than the mischief it selfe by them denounced and premonstrated.

So / there is no long sicknesse but is worse than death, for death is but a blowe and awaye, whereas sicknesse is like a Chancerie sute, which hangs two or three yeare ere it can come to a iudgement.

O a consumption is worse than a *Capias ad Ligatum*, to nothing can I cōpare it better, thā to a reprieue after a man is condemned, or to a boy with his hoase about his heeles, ready to be whipt, to whom his master stands preaching a long time all law and no Gospel, ere he proceed to execution. Or rather it is as a man should be rosted to death, and melt away by little and

little, whiles Phisitions lyke Cookes stand stuffing him out with hearbes, and basting him with this oyle and that firrup.

I am of the opinion, that to be famisht to death is farre better, for his paine in seauen or eight dayes is at an end, whereas he that is in a consumption, continues languishing manie yeares ere death haue mercie on him.

The next plague and the neereft that I know, in affinitie to a consumption, is long depending hope friuolously defeated, than which there is no greater miserie on earth: & so *per consequens* no men in earth more miserable than courtiers. It is a cowardly feare that is not resolute inough to despaire. It is like a pore hunger starvd wretch at sea, who still in expectation of a good voyage, endures more miseries than Iob. He that writes this can tell, for he hath neuer had good voyage in his life but one, & that was to a fortunate blessed Iland, nere those pinnacle rocks called the Needles. O it is a purified Continent, & a fertil plot fit to seat another Paradice, where or in no place, the image of the ancient hospitalitie is to be found.

While / I liue I will praise it and extoll it, for the true magnificence and continued honourable bountie that I saw there.

Farre vnworthie am I to spend the least breath

of commendation in the extolling so delightfull and pleasant a *Tempe*, or once to consecrate my inke with the excellent mention of the thrice noble and illustrious Chieftaine vnder whom it is flourishingly gouerned.

That rare ornament of our Countrey, learned Master *Camden*, whose desertfull name is vniuersally admyred throughout Christendome, in the last repollished Edition of his *Brittania*, hath most elaborate and exactly described the souereigne plenteous scituation of that Ile ; as also the inestimable happines it inherites, it beeing patronizd and carefully protected by so heroicall and courageous a Commaunder.

Men that haue neuer tasted that full spring of his liberalitie, wherwith (in my most forsaken extremities) right graciously hee hath deigned to reuiue and refresh mee, may rashly (at first sight) implead me of flatterie, and not esteeme these my feruent tearmes as the necessary repaiment of due debt, but words idly begotten with good lookes, and in an ouer-ioyed humour of vaine hope flipt from me by chance : but therein they shall shewe themselues too vnciuill iniurious, both to my deuoted obseruant dutie, and the condigne deare purchased merite of his glorie.

Too base a ground is this, whereon to embroyder the rich storie of his eternall renownme ;

some longer lyued Tractate I referue for the full blaze of his vertues, which here / onely in the sparkes I decypher. Manie embers of encumbrances haue I at this time, which forbid the bright flame of my zeale to mount aloft as it would. Perforce I must breake from it, since other turbulent cares fit as now at the stearne of my inuention. Thus I conclude with this chance medley Parenthesis, that whatfoeuer minutes intermission I haue of calmed content, or least respite to call my wits together, principall and immediate proceedeth from him.

Through him my tender wainſcot studie doore is deliuered from much assault and battrie: through him I looke into, and am looked on in the world: from whence otherwise I were a wretched banished exile. Through him all my good (as by a conduit head) is conueighed vnto me; and to him all my endeouours (like riuers) shall pay tribute as to the Ocean.

Did *Ouid* entitle *Carus* a Noble-man of *Rome*, the onely constant friend hee had, in his vngratefull extrusion amongst the *Getes*: and writ to him thus,

*Qui quod es id verè Care vocaris.*

And in another Elegie,

*O mihi post nullos Care memorande sodales ?*

Much more may I acknowledge all redundant prostrate vassailage to the royall descended Familie of the *Careys*: but for whom, my spirit long ere this had expyred, and my pen seru'd as a puniard to gall my owne hart.

Why doo I vse so much circumstance, and in a streame on which none but gnats and flies doo swimme, found Fames trumpet like *Triton*, to call a number of foolish skiffes and light cock-boates to parley?

Feare (if I be not deceiud) was the last pertinent matter I had vnder my displing; from which I feare I haue strayed beyond my limits: and yet feare hath no limits, for to hell and beyond hell, it sinkes downe and penetrates.

But this was my position, that the feare of anie expected euill, is worfe than the euill it felfe; which by dyuers comparifons I confirmed.

Now to visions and apparitions againe, as fast as I can trudge.

The glasses of our sight (in the night) are like the prospectiue glasses one *Hofsius* made in *Rome*, which represented the images of things farre greater than they were: each moate in the darke they made a monfter, and euerie sleight glimmering a giant.

A solitarie man in his bed, is like a poore bed-red lazar, lying by the highway side; vnto whose



displaied wounds and fores a number of stinging flyes doo swarme for pastance and beuerage : his naked wounds are his inward hart-griping woes, the waspes and flyes his idle wandering thoughts ; who to that secret smarting pain he hath alreadie, do adde a further sting of impatience, and new lanch his sleeping griefes and vexations.

Questionlesse this is an vnrefutable consequence, that the man who is mocked of his fortune, he that hath consumed his braines to compasse prosperitie, and meetes with no counteruaylement in hir likenefse, but hedge wine and leane mutton, and peradventure some halfe eid good looks that can hardly be discerned from winking ; this poore piteous perplexed miscreant either final / lie despaire[s] ; or like a lanke frost-bitten plant looseth hys vigor or spirit by little and little : anie terror, the least illusion in the earth, is a *Cacodæmon* vnto him. His soule hath left his bodie ; for, why, it is flying after these ayrie incorporeate Courtly promises, and glittering painted allurements ; which when they vanish to nothing, it lykewise vanisheth with them.

Excessiue ioy no lesse hath his defectiue and ioyleffe operations, the spleene into water it melteth ; so that except it be some momentarie bubbles of mirth, nothing it yeelds but a cloying surfet of repentance.

Diuers instances haue we of men, whom too much fodaine content and ouer-rauished delight hath brought vntimely to their graues.

Foure or fiue I haue read of, whom the very extremitie of laughter hath bereft of their liues: whereby I gather, that euen such another pernicious sweete, superfluous mirth is to the fence, as a surfet of honnie to a mans stomacke, than the which there is nothing more dangerous.

Bee it as dangerous as it will, it cannot but be an easie kinde of death. It is like one that is stung with an *Aspis*, who in the midst of his paine falls delighted asleepe, and in that suauitie or slumber surrenders the ghost: whereas hee whom greefe vndertakes to bring to his end, hath his hart gnawen in funder by little & little with vultures, like *Prometheus*.

But this is nothing (you will obiect) to our iourneys ende of apparitions. Yes, altogether: for of the ouerfwelling superabundance of ioy and greefe, wee frame to / our selues most of our melancholy dreames and visions.

There is an old Philosophicall common Prouerbe, *Vnusquisque fingit fortunam sibi*, Euerie one shapes hys owne fortune as he lists. More aptly may it be said, Euerie one shapes his owne feares and fancies as he list.

In all points our brains are like the firmament,

and exhale in euery respect the like grosse mistempred vapors and meteors; of the more fœculent combustible ayrie matter whereof, afrighting formes and monstrous images innumerable are created: but of the flymie vnweeldier droffie part, dull melancholy or droufines.

And as the firmament is still mouing and working, so vncessant is the wheeling and rolling on of our braines; which euerie hower are tempring some newe peece of prodigie or other, and turmoyling, mixing and changing the course of our thoughts.

I write not this, for that I thinke there are no true apparitiōs or prodigies, but to shew how easily we may be flouted if we take not great heed, with our own anticke suppositions. I will tell you a strange tale tending to this nature: whether of true melancholy or true apparition, I will not take vpon me to determine.

It was my chance in Februarie last to be in the Countrey some threescore myle off from London; where a Gentleman of good worship and credit falling sicke, the verie second day of his lying downe, hee pretended to haue miraculous waking visions: which before I enter to describe, thus much I will informe ye by the way, that at the reporting of them he was in perfect memorie; nor had / sicknes yet so tirannizd ouer him to make

his tongue grow idle. A wife graue sensible man he was euer reputed, and so approou'd himselfe in all his actions in his life time. This which I deliuer (with manie preparatiue protestations) to a great Man of this Land hee confidently auouched: beleue it or condemne it, as you shal see cause, for I leaue it to be censured indifferently.

The first day of his distemperature, he visibly saw (as he affirmed) al his chamber hung with filken nets and siluer hookes, the diuell (as it should seeme) comming thether a fishing; whereupon [he said] euery [word of] Pater noster, while he lookt whether in the nets he should be entangled, or with the hookes ensnared; with the nets he feared to be strangled or smothered, & with the hooks to haue his throat scratcht out, and his flesh rent and mangled: at length, he knew not how, they sodainly vanished, and the whole chamber was clered. Next a cōpanie of lusty failers (euerie one a sharker or a swaggerer at the least) hauing made a braue voyage, came carousing and quaffing in large siluer kans to his helth. Fellowes they were that had good big pop mouths to crie Port a helme Saint George, and knew as well as the best what belongs to haling of bolings yare, and falling on the star-boord buttocke.

But to the issue of my tale: their drunken proffers he vtterly put by, and sayd hee highly

scorned and detested both them and their hellish disguisings: which notwithstanding, they tost their cups to the skies, and reeled and staggered vp and downe the roome like a ship shaking in the winde.

After all they danst Lustie gallant, & a drunken Danish Lualto / or two, and so departed. For the third course, rusht in a number of stately diuels, bringing in boystrous chests of massie trefure betwixt thē. As braue they were as Turkish Ianissaries, hauing their apparel all powdred with gold and pearle, and their armes as it were be-mayled with rich chaynes and bracelets; but faces far blacker than anie ball of Tobacco, great glaring eyes that had whole shelues of Kentish oysters in them, and terrible wyde mouthes, whereof not one of them, but would well haue made a case for *Molenax* great Gloabe of the world.

These louely youths and full of fauour, hauing stalkt vp and downe the iust measures of a sink-apace, opened one of the principall chests they brought, and out of it pluckt a Princely royall Tent, whose empearled shining canopie they quickly aduanced on hie, and with all artificiall magnificence adorned like a state: which performed, pompous *Lucifer* entred, imitating in goodly stature the huge picture of *Laocoon* at *Rome*: who sent vnto him a gallant Embassadour, signifying

thus much, that if hee would serue him, hee should haue all the rich treasures that he saw there, or anie farther wealth hee would desire.

The Gentleman returned this milde aunswere, that he knew not what he was, whether an Angell or a wicked feend: and if an Angell, he was but his fellow seruant, and no otherwise to be serued or regarded; if a fiend or a diuell, hee had nothing to doo with him, for God had exalted and redeemed him aboue his desperate out-cast condition, and a strong faith he had to defie & withstand all / his iugling temptations. Hauing vttered these words, all the whole traine of them inuisibly auoyded, and hee neuer set eye on them after.

Then did ther, for the third pageant, present themselues vnto him, an inueigling troupe of naked Virgins, thrice more amiable and beautifull than the bright Vestals, that brought in *Augustus* Testament to the Senate, after hys decease: but no Vestall-like Ornament had they about them; for from top to toe bare despoyled they were, except some one or two of them that ware maskes before their faces, and had transparent azur'd lawne veyles before the chiefe iewell houses of their honour.

Such goodly lustfull Bonarobaes they were (by his report) as if anie sharpe eyd Painter had been there to peruse them, he might haue learned to

exceed diuine *Michel Angelo* in the true boske of a naked, or curious *Tuns* in quicke life, whom the great masters of that Art do terme the sprightly old man.

Their haire they ware loose vnrowled about their shoulders, whose dangling amber trammells reaching downe beneath their knees, seemed to drop baulme on their delicious bodies; and euer as they moou'd too and fro, with their light windye wauings, wantonly to correct their exquisite mistresses.

Their daintie feete in their tender birdlike trippings, enameld (as it were) the dustie ground; and their odoriferous breath more perfumed the aire, than Ordinance would, that is charged with Amomum, Muske, Cyuet, and Amber-greece.

But to leaue amplifications and proceed: those sweet / bewitching naked maides, hauing maiestically paced about the chamber, to the end their naturall vnshelled shining mother pearle proportions might be more imprintingly apprehended, close to his bed-side modestly blushing they approached, & made impudent profer vnto him of their lasciuious embraces. He obstinaty bent to withstand these their sinfull allurements no lesse than the former, bad them goe seek entertainment of hotter bloods, for he had not to satisfie them. A cold comfort was this to poore wenches no

better cloathed, yet they hearing what to trust too, verie sorrowfully retyred, and shrunk away.

Lo in the fourth Act, there fallied out a graue asseembly of sober attyred Matrones, much like the Virgines of *Marie Magdalens* order in *Rome*, which vowe neuer to see man ; or the chaste daughters of Saint *Philip*.

With no incontinent curtesie did they greet him, but tolde him, if so hee thought good they would praye for him.

Therupon, frō the beginning to the ending he vnfolded vnto them, how he had been mightely hanted with wicked illusions of late : but neuer-theles, if he could be perswaded that they were Angels or Saintes, their inuocations could not hurt him ; yea he would adde his desire to their requestes, to make their prayers more penetrably enforcing.

Without further parley, vppon their knees they fell most deuoutly, and for halfe an hower neuer ceased extensiuely to intercessionate God for his speedie recouerie.

Rising / vp agayne on the right hand of his bed, there appeared a cleare light, and with that he might perceiue a naked slender foote offering to steale betwixt the sheets in to him.

At which instant, entred a messenger from a Knight of great honour thereabouts, who sent him



a most precious extract quintessence to drinke: which no sooner he tasted, but he thought hee saw all the fore-named Enterluders at once, hand over head leap, plunge, & drowne themselves in puddles and ditches hard by, and hee felt perfect ease.

But long it lasted not with him, for within foure howers after, hauing not fully settled his estate in order, hee grewe to trifling dotage, and rauing dyde within two daies following.

God is my witnesse, in all this relation, I borrowe no essential part from stretcht out inuention, nor haue I one iot abusde my informations; onely for the recreation of my Readers, whom loath to tyre with a course home-spunne tale, that should dull them worse than Holland cheese, heere and there I welt and garde it with allusive exornations and comparisons: and yet me thinkes it comes off too goutie and lumbring.

Bee it as it will, it is lyke to haue no more allowaunce of English for mee. If the world will giue it anie allowaunce of truth, so it is: For then I hope my excuse is alreadye lawfully custumed and authorized; since Truth is euer drawne and painted naked, and / I haue lent her but a leathren patcht cloake at most to keepe her from the colde: that is, that she come not off too lamely and coldly.

Vpon the accidentall occasion of this dreame or apparition (call or miscall it what you will, for it is yours as freely as anie waft paper that euer you had in your liues) was this Pamphlet (no bigger than an old Præface) speedily botcht vp and completed.

Are there anie doubts which remaine in your mynde vndigested, as touching this incredible Narration I haue vnfolded? Well, doubt you not, but I am milde and tractable, and will resolue you in what I may.

First, the house where this Gentleman dwelt, stood in a low marish ground, almost as rotten a Clymate as the Lowe Countreyes; where their mystie ayre is as thicke as mould butter, and the deaw lyes like froathie barme on the ground.

It was noted ouer and besides to haue been an vnluckie house to all his predeceffors, scituate in a quarter not altogether exempted from witches.

The abrupt falling into his sicknesse was suspicious, proceeding from no apparent surfet or misdiet. The outrageous tyrannie of it in so short a time, bred thrice more admiration and wonder, and his sodaine death incontinent ensuing vppon that his disclosed dreame or vision, might seeme some probable reason to confirme it; since none haue such palpable dreames or visions, but die presently after.

The like to this was Master *Allingtons* vision in the beginning of her Maiesties raigne ; than the which there is nothing / more ordinarilie bruted. Through Greeke and Romane common-places to this purport I could runne, if I were disposed to vaunt my selfe like a ridiculous Pedant, of deepe reading in *Fulgosius*, *Licosthenes*, and *Valerius*.

Goe no farther than the Court, and they will tell you of a mightie worthie man of this Land ; who riding in his Coatch from London to his house, was all the waye haunted with a couple of Hoggess, who followed him close, and doo what his men could they might not driue them from him : wherefore at night hee caused them to be shut vp in a barne, and commanded milke to be giuen them ; the barne dore was lockt, and the key safely kept, yet were they gone by morning, and no man knew how.

A number of men there be yet liuing, who haue been haunted by their wiues after their death, about forswearing themselues, and vndooing their children, of whom they promised to be carefull fathers : whereof I can gather no reason but this, that Women are borne to torment a man both aliue and dead.

I haue heard of others likewise, that beside these night terrors, haue been (for whole months

together whether foeuer they went or rid) purfued by wefels and rats, and oftentimes with fquirrels and hares ; that in the traueling of three hundred myle, haue ftill wayted on their horfe heeles.

But thofe are onely the exploytes and stratagems of witches, which may well aftonifh a little at firft fight, but if a man haue the leaft heart or fpirite to with-ftand one fierce blaft of their brauadoes, he fhall fee them fhinke fafter / than Northren cloath, and out-ftrip time in daftardly flight.

Fie, fie, was euer poore fellow fo farre benighted in an old wiues tale of diuells and vrchins. Out vpon it, I am wearie of it, for it hath caufed fuch a thicke fulfome Serena to defcend on my braine, that now my penne makes blots as broad as a furd ftomacher, and my mufe infpyres me to put out my candle and goe to bed : and yet I wyll not neyther, till after thefe nights reuells, I haue folemnly bid you good night, and fleep quietly without affrightment and annoyance.

Firft and formoft drinke moderately, and dice and drabbe not away your money prodigally, and then forfwear your felues to borrow more.

You that be pore mens children, know your own fathers ; & though you can fhift & cheate yourfelues into good cloathes here about Towne ; yet bow your knees to their leathern bagges and

ruffet coates, that they may bleſſe you from the ambition of Tiburne.

You that beare the name of ſouldiers, and liue baſelie ſwaggering in euerie ale-houſe, hauing no other exhibition but from harlots and ſtrumpets ; ſeeke ſome newe trade, and leaue whoring and quarrelling, leaſt beſides the nightly guilt of your owne banqurout conſciences, Bridewell or New-gate prooue the ende of your caueleering.

You, whoſoeuer or whereſoeuer you be, that liue by ſpyling and ouer-reaching yong Gentlemen, and make but a ſport to deride their ſimplicities to their vndooing, to /you the Night at one time or other will proue terrible, except you foorthwith thinke on reſtitution : or if you haue not your Night in this world, you will haue it in hell.

You that are married and haue wiues of your owne, and yet hold too nere frendſhip with your neighbours ; ſet vp your reſts, that the Night will be an il neighbour to your reſt, and that you ſhall haue as little peace of minde as the reſt. Therefore was *Troy* burnt by night, becauſe *Paris* by night prostituted *Helena*, and wrought ſuch trefon to Prince *Menelaus*.

You that are Macheuilian vaine fooles, and thinke it no wit or pollicie but to vowe and proteſt what you neuer meane, that trauell for nothing els but to learne the vices of other

countries, and disfigure the ill English faces that God hath giuen you, with Tuscan glickes and apish trickes ; the night is for you with a blacke faunt or a matachine, except you presently turne and conuert to the simplicitie you were borne too.

You that can cast a man into an Italian ague when you list, and imitate with your diet drinckes anie disease or infirmitie, the night likewise hath an infernall to act before yee.

Traitors that by night meete and consult how to walke in the day vndiscouered, & thinke those words of Christ vainly spoken, *There is nothing done in secret but shalbe reuealed and laid open :* to you no lesse the night shalbe as a night owle to vexe and torment you.

And finallie, O you Iudges and Magistrates, if there bee anye amongst you, that doo wrest all the Lawe into / their owne hands, by drawing and receyuing euery mans money into their hands, and making newe golden lawes of their owne, which nor Prince nor Parliament euer dreamed of ; that looke as iust as Iehouah by daye, enthronizing graue zeale and religion on the eleuated whites of their eyes, when by night corrupt gifts and rewards rush in at their gates in whole Armies, like Northren Carriers comming to their Inne ; that in steede of their bookes turne ouer their bribes, for the deciding of causes,

adiudging him the best right, that brings the richest present vnto them. If anie such there be I say, as in our Common-wealth I know none, but haue read of in other States, let them looke to haue a number of vnwelcome Clients of their owne accusing thoughts and imaginations, that will betray them in the night to euery idle feare and illusion.

Therefore are the terrors of the night more than of the day, because the finnes of the night surmount the finnes of the day.

By night time came the Deluge ouer the face of the whole earth; by night time *Iudas* betrayed Christ; *Tarquin* rauisht *Lucretia*.

When anie Poet would describe a horrible Tragically accident; to adde the more probabilitie & credence vnto it, he dismally beginneth to tell, how it was darke night when it was done, and cheerfull daylight had quite abandoned the firmament.

Hence it is, that sinne generally throughout the scripture is called the workes of darknesse; for neuer is the diuell so busie as then, and then he thinkes he may aswel vndiscovered / walke abroad, as homicides and outlawes.

Had we no more Religion than we might deriue from heathen fables; me thinkes those dolefull Querriers of the night, the Scritch-owle,

the Nightingale, and croking Frogs, might ouerawe vs from anie insolent transgression at that time. The first for her lauish blabbing of forbidden secrets, being for euer ordayned to be a blabbe of ill newes and misfortune, still is crying out in our eares, that we are mortall, and must die: the second puts vs in minde of the end and punishment of lust & rauishment; and the third and last, that we are but flyme & mud, such as those watric creatures are bred of: and therefore why should we delight to adde more to our flyme & corruption, by extraordinarie surfets and drunkennes.

But these are nothing neither in comparison: for hee whom in the day heauen cannot exhale, the night wil neuer helpe: she onely pleading for her old grandmother hell, as well as the day for heauen.

Thus I shut vp my Treatise, abruptly, that hee who in the daye doth not good woorkes inough to answere the obiections of the night, will hardly aunswere at the daye of iudgement.

FINIS.

END OF VOL. III.









